







1001

1051

EXTINCT ANIMALS





NOTICE

AFTER CAREFUL EXAMINATION OF THE  
INNER MARGIN AND TYPE OF MATERIAL  
WE HAVE SEWN THIS VOLUME BY HAND  
SO IT CAN BE MORE EASILY OPENED  
AND READ.



*E. Ray Lankester.*

QE-  
763  
L28  
1905  
VPAL

# Extinct Animals

By

*dwim*  
E. RAY LANKESTER, M.A., LL.D., F.R.S.

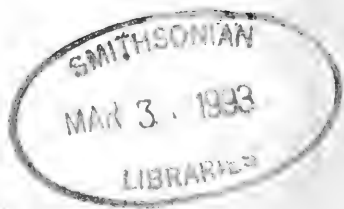
*Director of the Natural History Departments of the  
British Museum; Correspondent of the Institute  
of France*

WITH 218 ILLUSTRATIONS

LONDON

ARCHIBALD CONSTABLE & CO LTD

1905



(560.3)  
L566

BUTLER & TANNER,  
THE SELWOOD PRINTING WORKS,  
FROME, AND LONDON.

193841 c

## PREFACE

**T**HIS volume is a corrected shorthand report of the course of lectures adapted to a juvenile audience given by me during the Christmas holidays 1903-4 at the Royal Institution, London. The lantern slides which I used in the lectures have been converted into process blocks. Many of these were photographs specially prepared under my direction for the lectures, and are from specimens in the Natural History Museum. My desire was, as far as possible, to illustrate what I said by photographs taken from actual specimens. Some of these have come out fairly well as process-blocks. For several of the slides and figures I have to thank my friend and colleague Dr. Arthur Smith Woodward, Keeper of the Geological Department of the Museum, to whom I am greatly indebted for kind help in many ways in regard to these lectures. I have

## PREFACE

also to thank other friends for the loan of lantern-slides and consequent process-blocks, viz., Mr. R. Lydekker, Dr. Bather, Dr. Andrews and Mr. Pyecraft of the British Museum, and Professor Sollas of Oxford. I am also indebted to the Trustees of the British Museum for permission to use several figures of extinct animals taken from the guide-books to the Natural History Museum, published by their order, to Messrs. Macmillan & Co., and to Mr. John Murray.

I trust that this volume will not be regarded as anything more ambitious than an attempt to excite in young people an interest in a most fascinating study, and that it will be understood that it does not profess to give more than a peep at the strange and wonderful history of extinct animals.

E. RAY LANKESTER.

1905.

# CONTENTS

CHAPTER I	PAGE
ANIMALS WHICH HAVE LATELY BECOME EXTINCT— THE STRATA OF THE EARTH'S CRUST . . . . .	1
CHAPTER II	
STRATA AND LAND SURFACES—TEETH AND BONES— EXTINCT MEN—FLINT IMPLEMENTS—THE MAM- MOTH ELEPHANTS AND MASTODON—CLASSIFI- CATION OF ANIMALS . . . . .	59
CHAPTER III	
THE ANCESTRAL HISTORY OF ELEPHANTS—EXTINCT HORSES AND RHINOCEROSSES—THE ARSINOITHE- RIUM . . . . .	103
CHAPTER IV	
EXTINCT GIRAFFES AND THE OKAPI—THE GIANT SLOTHS OF SOUTH AMERICA AND THE GIANT KAN- GAROO OF AUSTRALIA . . . . .	155

# CONTENTS

	PAGE
CHAPTER V	
THE GREAT EXTINCT REPTILES—DINOSAURS FROM THE OOLITES—THE PARIASAURUS AND INOSTRAN- SEVIA FROM THE TRIAS OF NORTH RUSSIA AND SOUTH AFRICA—MARINE REPTILES . . .	190

## CHAPTER VI

EXTINCT FISHES—BELEMNITES — LINGULA — TRILO- BITES—SCORPIONS AND STONE LILIES . . .	245
--	-----



## LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS

	Portrait of the Author . . . . .	<i>Frontispiece</i>
<b>FIG.</b>		<b>PAGE</b>
1.	A number of bones of extinct animals embedded in rock, from Pikermi near Athens . . . . .	2
2.	Head of an Ichthyosaurus, from the Liassic rocks of Lyme Regis . . . . .	6
3.	The skeleton of the Megatherium found in the alluvial sands of the Argentine Republic . . . . .	7
4.	The skeleton of a gigantic extinct rat-like animal—the Toxodon—from the Argentine Republic . . . . .	8
5.	Photographs of two skulls of Rhinoceroses in the Natural History Museum . . . . .	10
6.	Photograph of the thigh-bone of the great extinct reptile, Atlantosaurus, from the Jurassic rocks of the United States of America . . . . .	11
7.	The Common Grey Wolf ( <i>Canis lupus</i> ) of Europe, once common in England . . . . .	14
8.	Photograph of a mounted specimen of the Beaver . . . . .	15
9.	Skull of the great extinct Bull, the <i>Bos Primigenius</i> or the Urus, or Aurochs . . . . .	17

## LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS

FIG.	PAGE
10. Photograph of the living Quagga ( <i>Equus quagga</i> ),	18
11. Photograph of the living Zebra ( <i>Equus burchelli</i> ).	19
12. Photograph of two Giraffes from life . . . . .	21
13. Steller's drawing of the Sea-cow discovered by him and called <i>Rhytina stelleri</i> . . . . .	22
14. Photograph of a skull of Steller's Sea-cow . . . . .	22
15. The Great Auk, or Gurb-fowl ( <i>Alca impennis</i> ). Photographed with its egg . . . . .	23
15A. Egg of the Great Auk, of the natural size . . . . .	25
16. Reproduction of a picture of the Dodo, painted by Roland Savery from life, in 1626 . . . . .	26
17. A nearly complete skeleton of the Dodo, put to- gether from bones collected by Mr. George Clark in a marshy pool in Mauritius . . . . .	27
18. The living Giant Tortoise of the Court House, Mauritius . . . . .	29
19. The ruins of the ancient Roman public buildings at Puzzuoli (Puteoli) near Naples . . . . .	32
20. One of the three columns of the "temple" at Puzzuoli . . . . .	33
21. Puzzuoli or Puteoli in the time of the Roman Empire (third century) . . . . .	35
22. Puzzuoli in the ninth century . . . . .	36
23. Puzzuoli at the present day . . . . .	37
24. Imaginary view of Spanish sailors carving an inscription on rocks at sea-level in 1600 A.D., on the Chilian coast . . . . .	39
25. The same rocks as they would appear in 1900, raised 150 feet above the sea-level by an imperceptible movement of six inches a year . . . . .	40

## LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS

FIG.	PAGE
26. Map to show the effect of elevation of the earth's surface on the distribution of land and water in Western Europe . . . . .	41
27. The real test of Geology : an attempt to determine the distribution of land and water in past ages.	43
28. Photograph of a slab of Bognor Rock (Lower Eocene) showing embedded marine shells . . . .	45
29. Skeleton of a tapir-like animal (Palæotherium) as found embedded in calcareous rock at Montmartre, Paris . . . . .	46
30. Wings of a Dragon-fly preserved in the ancient limestone of the Carboniferous period or Coal-bearing rocks . . . . .	47
31. Pterodactyle skeleton preserved in Lithographic limestone, showing the impression of the membrane of the wings . . . . .	47
32. A jelly-fish (similar to the recent <i>Aurelia aurita</i> ) preserved in Lithographic limestone . . . .	48
33. Alternate layers of hard and soft rock ("strata") forming the sea-cliff at Lyme Regis . . . .	49
34. Tilted strata of the Chalk at Seaford, Sussex.	50
35. Strata of the cliff at Lyme Regis . . . . .	51
36. Diagram to show the effect of the bending or undulation of the earth's crust . . . . .	52
37. Ripple-marks preserved in ancient Triassic strata .	53
38. Bird-like footprints on a slab of Triassic rock from Connecticut, U.S.A. . . . .	54
39. Three-toed footprint (probably of <i>Iguanodon</i> ) from the Wealden Sandstone of the Isle of Wight	54
40. Slab of Triassic rock from Cheshire, showing hand-like five-fingered footprints . . . . .	55

## LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS

FIG.	PAGE
41. A tabular view of the strata of the earth's crust, showing the relative thickness of each "system" or group of strata, and the position in which important animal remains have been discovered.	60
42. Map of the World, showing its division into great provinces and regions characterised by the presence of different kinds of animals . . . .	63
43. Photograph of the original piece (seven inches long) of a thigh bone of a gigantic bird, from the examination of which Sir Richard Owen inferred the former existence of a gigantic flightless bird in New Zealand . . . . .	68
44. Photograph of Sir Richard Owen standing beside the restored skeleton of the New Zealand Moa ( <i>Dinornis maximus</i> ) . . . . .	69
45. Photograph of the skeleton of Man and Horse from a group, prepared under the direction of Sir William Flower for the Natural History Museum	71
46. Photograph of the back of a skull of an Ox . . . .	73
47. Photograph of the back of a Crocodile's skull . . . .	74
48. Drawing of the auditory organ or internal ear of man . . . . .	75
49. Photograph from a section through the bone in which the soft internal ear is lodged . . . .	75
50. Photograph from preparations of the upper and lower jaw of a Pig, to show the teeth in position.	78
51. Photograph of a preparation of the teeth of the upper and lower jaw of a Pig . . . . .	79
52. Photograph of a preparation of the upper and lower jawbone of man . . . . .	80
53. Skull of the Clouded Tiger . . . . .	81
54. Photograph of the skull of the Coypu Rat . . . .	82

## LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS

FIG.	PAGE
55. Jaws of the Gharial, an Indian crocodile . . . . .	82
56. Photograph of the skull and lower jaw of a true Crocodile . . . . .	83
57. Enlarged representation of the lower jaw of a small mammal ( <i>Amphitherium prevostii</i> ) from the Stonesfield slate of Jurassic (Oolite) age near Oxford . . . . .	84
58. Photographs of two flint implements of the Palæo- lithic age . . . . .	86
59. Photograph of the top of the skull or "calvaria" of the so-called Monkey-man, <i>Pithecanthropus</i> , discovered in Java . . . . .	88
59A. Photograph of a human skull of modern European race . . . . .	89
60. Engravings on ivory and bone made by ancient men, who lived in caves in the South of France at the time when the mammoth, reindeer, bear and hyæna inhabited Europe . . . . .	91
61. Engraving on ivory found in a cave in the South of France . . . . .	92
62. The skeleton of the Mammoth found frozen in Siberia . . . . .	93
63. Skeleton of a male of the giant Irish deer ( <i>Cervus giganteus</i> ) dug up from peat in Ireland . . . . .	94
64. An imaginary picture of the Mammoth ( <i>Elephas primigenius</i> ) as it appeared in life . . . . .	96
65. Photograph from life of the Indian Elephant ( <i>Elephas maximus</i> ), incompletely grown . . . . .	97
66. Photograph of a young specimen of the African Elephant ( <i>Elephas africanus</i> ) from life . . . . .	98
67. Two tusks of Elephants photographed from speci- mens in the Natural History Museum . . . . .	99

## LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS

FIG.	PAGE
68. Skeleton of the American Mastodon ( <i>Mastodon americanus</i> ), from a drawing by the late Professor Marsh . . . . .	100
69. Skeleton of Indian Elephant ( <i>Elephas maximus</i> ) . . . . .	101
70. Skull of an adult Indian Elephant . . . . .	104
71. Photographs of skulls of a Bull-dog on the left and of a Greyhound on the right to show the shortening of the bones of the face in the first . . . . .	105
72. Photograph of the skull of the American Mastodon ( <i>Mastodon americanus</i> ), from the specimen in the Natural History Museum . . . . .	106
73. Skull of a new-born Indian Elephant . . . . .	107
74. Section of the skull of a young Indian Elephant . . . . .	108
75. Section of a half-grown Indian Elephant's skull . . . . .	109
76. Lower jaw of an Indian Elephant . . . . .	110
76A. The last molar of the lower jaw of a Mammoth . . . . .	111
77. Lower jaw of an adult African Elephant . . . . .	112
78. Lower jaw of the American Mastodon . . . . .	113
78A. Molar teeth of <i>Mastodon arvernensis</i> , photographed from specimens found in the Red Crag of Suffolk . . . . .	115
79. Photograph of the complete skeleton of <i>Mastodon (Tetrabelodon) angustidens</i> , from the Miocene strata of the South of France . . . . .	116
80. Restored representation of the skull and lower jaw of <i>Mastodon (Tetrabelodon) angustidens</i> , from a drawing prepared by Dr. Henry Woodward, F.R.S. . . . .	117
81. The skull of <i>Dinotherium giganteum</i> , Kemp, from the Miocene of Eppelsheim, near, Worms, on the Rhine . . . . .	118

## LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS

FIG.	PAGE
82. Drawing representing the probable appearance in life of the <i>Tetrabelodon angustidens</i> . . . . .	119
83. A drawing of the head of <i>Tetrabelodon angustidens</i> with open mouth and uplifted "trunk." . . . . .	121
84. Drawing of the head of the African Elephant, with uplifted trunk . . . . .	122
85. A scene in the Fayum Desert, showing the remains of silicified trees, embedded in the sands . . . . .	124
86. Profile views of a series of Elephant ancestors, from drawings by Dr. Andrews . . . . .	126
87. Lower jaws of extinct Elephants, from drawings by Dr. Andrews . . . . .	128
88. Profile and palatine views of the skull of <i>Meritherium Lyonsi</i> , as restored by Dr. Andrews . . . . .	129
89. The <i>Meritherium</i> , discovered by Dr. Andrews . . . . .	130
90. Photograph of a model of a thoroughbred English horse, by Vashtag . . . . .	133
91. Hind- and fore-foot of an English cart-horse . . . . .	135
92. Hind-foot and fore-foot of the horse-ancestor, <i>Hyracotherium</i> . . . . .	137
93. The hind- and the fore-foot of <i>Hipparion</i> , one of the three-toed ancestors of the horse . . . . .	138
94. The skeleton of <i>Hyracotherium</i> , an ancestor of the modern horse, found in Eocene strata. . . . .	139
95. Restoration of the probable appearance of the <i>Hyracotherium</i> . . . . .	140
96. Skeleton of the <i>Phenacodus</i> , a five-toed Eocene animal, related to the ancestor of the Horse . . . . .	141
97. Cheek-teeth or molars of the upper and lower jaw, left side, of <i>Mesohippus Bairdii</i> , from the Middle Oligocene of South Dakota . . . . .	141

## LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS

FIG.	PAGE
98. Upper molar tooth of a recent Horse . . . . .	142
99. The skeleton of <i>Rhinoceros antiquitatis</i> , the Woolly Rhinoceros of the late Pleistocene period in Europe and Siberia . . . . .	143
100. Photograph of a stuffed specimen of the Square-mouthed African Rhinoceros ( <i>R. simus</i> . . . . .	144
101. Skeleton of <i>Titanotherium (Brontops) robustum</i> , from the Lower Miocene of Dakota . . . . .	145
102. Photograph of a skull of <i>Titanotherium</i> . . . . .	146
103. Side-view of the skull of <i>Titanotherium</i> . . . . .	147
104. Skeleton of <i>Dinoceras mirabile</i> . . . . .	148
105. Probable appearance in life of the <i>Dinoceras mirabile</i> of North America . . . . .	149
106. Photographs of plaster casts of the brain-cavity of (A) <i>Dinoceras</i> , (B) Hippopotamus, (C) Horse, and (D) Rhinoceros . . . . .	150
107 Drawing of the skull of <i>Arsinötherium Tittelli</i> (Beadnell) . . . . .	152
108. A drawing showing the probable appearance in life of <i>Arsinötherium</i> . . . . .	153
109. Drawing of the head of the Five-horned Giraffe . . . . .	156
110. Photograph of the skull of the Five-horned Giraffe . . . . .	157
111. Front teeth of the lower jaw of the Giraffe and allied animals . . . . .	159
112. Photograph of a restored skull of the Sivatherium . . . . .	160
113. Photograph of the skull of the Samotherium . . . . .	161
114. Restored skeleton of the giraffe-like animal Hella-dotherium . . . . .	162



## LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS

FIG.	PAGE
115. Photograph of the specimen of the Okapi ( <i>Okapia erichsoni</i> ) obtained by Sir Harry Johnston near the Semliki river in Central Africa. . . . .	163
116. Photograph of a skull of a male Okapi . . . . .	164
117. Photograph of the two "bandoliers" cut from the striped part of the skin of an Okapi . . . . .	165
118. Photograph of a stuffed specimen of the two-toed Sloth ( <i>Cholæpus didactylus</i> ), hanging from a branch of a tree . . . . .	168
119. Photograph of a stuffed specimen of the Hairy Armadillo or Peludo ( <i>Dasypus villosus</i> ) . . . . .	169
120. Drawing of the skeleton of the great extinct armadillo-like animal called Glyptodon . . . . .	170
121. Probable appearance in life of the Giant Ground Sloth, the <i>Megatherium giganteum</i> . . . . .	171
122. The skeleton of <i>Mylodon robustus</i> , one of the giant Ground Sloths of the Argentine. . . . .	173
123. View, looking outwards, from the mouth of the cavern on the fiord of the Ultima Speranza in Southern Patagonia, in which have been found the skin and hair and the bones with cartilage, blood and tendon and the dung of the Mylodon and other animals. . . . .	174
124. Photograph of a piece of the skin of the Mylodon	175
125. The under side of the same piece of skin as that shown in Fig. 124 . . . . .	176
126. Photograph of various specimens found with the remains of the Mylodon in the Ultima Speranza cave . . . . .	177
127. Photograph of remains of Mylodon from the cave of the Ultima Speranza . . . . .	178
128. Photograph of a "barrel-full of bones" obtained by prospectors from the cave of Ultima Speranza	179

## LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS

FIG.	PAGE
129. Photograph having the same history as that shown in Fig. 128 . . . . .	180
130. Photograph of three pellets of the dung of the Mylodon from the cave of Ultima Speranza . . .	181
131. Photographs of the leg-bone (tibia) of Mylodon, from the cave of Ultima Speranza . . . . .	182
132. Drawing of the skull of the Giant Australian Marsupial, Diprotodon . . . . .	185
133. The restoration of the skeleton of Diprotodon, as drawn by the late Sir Richard Owen . . . . .	186
134. Photograph of the morass or lake in South Australia in which the remains of several specimens of Diprotodon have been recently discovered . . .	187
135. View of the upper surface of the right hind-foot of Diprotodon, as discovered by Professor Stirling of Adelaide, South Australia . . . . .	188
136. Lower jaws of the ancient Mammals, Dromatherium (upper—Triassic), and Dryolestes (lower—Jurassic) . . . . .	189
137. Photograph of a cast taken from life of the New Zealand lizard <i>Tua-tara</i> , known as <i>Sphenodon punctatus</i> . . . . .	193
138. <i>Phrynosoma orbiculare</i> (Mexican Horned Lizard, or Horned Toad) . . . . .	194
139. <i>Chlamydosaurus kengi</i> , from Queensland, Australia . . . . .	195
140. <i>Zonurus giganteus</i> (Great Girdled Lizard) . . . . .	196
141. Drawing of the skeleton of <i>Iguanodon bernissartensis</i> . . . . .	197
142. Probable appearance of the Iguanodon in its living condition . . . . .	198
143. Two teeth of <i>Iguanodon mantelli</i> . . . . .	199

## LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS

FIG.	PAGE
144. A portion of the upper jaw of the recent lizard Iguana . . . . .	200
145. Photograph of the skull of an Iguanodon . . . . .	202
146. Drawing of the skeleton of a carnivorous Dinosaur, the Megalosaurus . . . . .	203
147. Drawing of a completely restored skeleton of the Brontosaurus . . . . .	205
148. Probable appearance of the Ceteosaurus (and of the closely similar Diplodochus and Brontosaurus) in life . . . . .	206
149. Drawing of the appearance in life of the three- horned Dinosaur, Triceratops . . . . .	207
150. Probable appearance in life of the Jurassic Dinosaur, Stegosaurus . . . . .	208
151. Photograph of the skeleton of Parisaurus . . . . .	211
152. Probable appearance in life of the Theromorph Reptile, Dimetrodon . . . . .	212
153. View of one of the dark patches in the cliffs of the river Dwina . . . . .	213
154. One of the nodules showing the form of the em- bedded skeleton . . . . .	214
155. Peasants working on the face of the cliff near Archangel and removing nodules containing the skeletons of great reptiles . . . . .	215
156. Professor Amalitzki's workshop in Warsaw . . . . .	216
157. A series of skeletons of Parisaurus removed bit by bit from Archangel nodules and mounted as de- tached specimens by Professor Amalitzki . . . . .	217
158. Photograph of a skeleton of Parisaurus, removed from an enveloping nodule and mounted by Professor Amalitzki . . . . .	218

## LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS

FIG.	PAGE
159. Photograph by Professor Amalitzki on a larger scale of a skull of a <i>Pariasaurus</i> from an Archangel nodule . . . . .	219
160. Skeleton of a huge carnivorous beast of prey, the reptile named <i>Inostransevia</i> . . . . .	220
161. Skull of the gigantic Thermorph Carnivorous Reptile, <i>Inostransevia</i> . . . . .	221
162. Photograph of another skull of <i>Inostransevia</i> . . . . .	222
163. Photograph of a skeleton of a <i>Plesiosaurus</i> . . . . .	223
164. <i>Plesiosaurus</i> as it probably appeared when alive . . . . .	224
165. Photograph of a skeleton of the large-paddled <i>Ichthyosaurus</i> . . . . .	225
166. Drawing to show the probable appearance of an <i>Ichthyosaurus</i> swimming beneath the surface of the sea . . . . .	226
167. Photograph of the upper surface of the skull of an <i>Ichthyosaurus</i> . . . . .	228
168. Side view of the skeleton of an <i>Ichthyosaurus</i> . . . . .	229
169. Photograph of a restoration of the skeleton of the great Pterodactyle ( <i>Pteranodon longiceps</i> ) . . . . .	230
170. The great Pterodactyle <i>Pteranodon</i> as it appeared in flight . . . . .	231
171. Photographs of three wings for comparison of their structure . . . . .	233
172. Probable appearance in life of two kinds of Jurassic Pterodactyles ( <i>Dimorphodon</i> and <i>Rhamphorhynchus</i> ) . . . . .	235
173. Restored skeleton of the toothed Bird <i>Ichthyornis</i> . . . . .	237
174. The Berlin specimen of the <i>Archæopteryx lithographica</i> . . . . .	238

## LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS

FIG.	PAGE
175. Photographs to one scale of the South American <i>Cariama</i> and the skull of the gigantic extinct <i>Phororachus</i> . . . . .	240
176. Photographs to one scale of the <i>Apteryx</i> , the Ostrich and the giant <i>Moa</i> of New Zealand, each with its egg . . . . .	242
177. The hard bony scales of a Ganoid Fish . . . . .	247
178. Photograph of a dried skin of the <i>Polypterus</i> of the Nile . . . . .	249
179. A fossil Ganoid Fish, as discovered embedded in rock . . . . .	250
180. Outline drawing of the extinct Ganoid Fish <i>Osteoleps</i> . . . . .	251
181. The Australian Lung-fish <i>Ceratodus</i> . . . . .	252
182. The extinct Devonian Fish <i>Dipterus</i> . . . . .	253
183. Outline drawings of the extinct fish <i>Pterichthys</i> . . . . .	254
184. Photograph of a cardboard model of <i>Pterichthys</i> . . . . .	255
185. The upper figure is a restored outline of the curious Devonian fish <i>Coccosteus</i> . . . . .	257
186. Photograph from the original specimen of <i>Cephalaspis lyeli</i> , preserved in the Natural History Museum . . . . .	258
187. Drawings of the head-shield of the fossil fish <i>Pteraspis</i> . . . . .	259
188. Photograph (of the natural size) of a specimen showing parts of the upper and lower head-shields of <i>Pteraspis crouchii</i> , with ten rows of lozenge-shaped scales attached . . . . .	260
189. Photographs of models of the Devonian Fish <i>Drepanaspis</i> , in the Natural History Museum . . . . .	261
190. Outline drawing of the Silurian fish <i>Birkenia</i> . . . . .	262

## LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS

FIG.	PAGE
191. Outline drawing of <i>Lasanius</i> . . . . .	262
192. Photograph of the jaws of a large recent Shark ( <i>Carcharodon rondeletii</i> ) . . . . .	264
192A. Photograph of the natural size of a tooth of the great Shark, <i>Carcharodon megalodon</i> . . . . .	265
193. Ammonites ( <i>Aegoceras</i> ) <i>capricornus</i> . . . . .	267
193A. Shell of the Pearly Nautilus . . . . .	267
194. Divided shell of the Pearly Nautilus . . . . .	268
195. The shell of <i>Ancyloceras matheronianum</i> . . . . .	269
196. <i>Belemnites hastatus</i> , from the Oxford Clay (Jurassic)	270
197. Restored drawing of the animal in which the "Belemnite" is formed . . . . .	271
198. <i>Loligo media</i> , a cuttle-fish or squid now living in British seas . . . . .	272
199. <i>Lingula</i> ( <i>Lingulella</i> ) <i>davisii</i> , of the natural size, embedded in the slaty rock of Port Madoc, North Wales . . . . .	273
200. One of the most ancient Trilobites known ( <i>Cono- coryphe lyelli</i> ) . . . . .	273
201. Drawing of <i>Triarthrus becki</i> . . . . .	275
202. The Desert Scorpion ( <i>Buthus australis</i> ) . . . . .	276
203. Drawing of the remains of a Scorpion ( <i>Palæophonus hunteri</i> ) . . . . .	277
204. Completed drawing of the Scotch Silurian Scorpion ( <i>Palæophonus hunteri</i> ) . . . . .	278
205. Completed drawing of the Silurian Scorpion of Gothland ( <i>Palæophonus nuncius</i> ) . . . . .	278

## LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS

FIG.	PAGE
206. View of the anterior part of a recent Scorpion from below . . . . .	279
207. View from below of the anterior part of the great Silurian Scorpion-like creature <i>Pterygotus osiliensis</i> . . . . .	280
208. Photograph of a restored model of <i>Stylonurus lacoanus</i> ) . . . . .	281
209. <i>Eurypterus fischeri</i> , a marine Scorpion-like animal from the Silurian rocks of Rootzikul . . . . .	282
210. Dorsal view of the King-Crab ( <i>Limulus polyphemus</i> , Linnæus), one-fourth the size of nature . . . . .	283
211. Diagram of the dorsal surface of a King-Crab . . . . .	284
212. Diagram of the ventral surface of the same King-Crab . . . . .	285
213. Dorsal view of the eighteen segments and post-anal spine or sting . . . . .	286
214. Slab containing <i>Pentacrinus hemeri</i> . . . . .	287
215. Photograph of a block of Limestone of the Carboniferous, showing several kinds of stone-lilies or Encrinites . . . . .	288
216. <i>Encrinus fossilis</i> , of Blumenbach, the original "Stone-lily." . . . .	289
217. The living British Encrinite, the minute young of the Feather Star-fish ( <i>Comatula</i> or <i>Antedon</i> ),	291
218. Drawing by Mr. Berjeau from an actual specimen of the Feather Star-fish ( <i>Comatula</i> or <i>Antedon rosacea</i> ) . . . . .	292





## CHAPTER I

### ANIMALS WHICH HAVE LATELY BECOME EX- TINCT—THE STRATA OF THE EARTH'S CRUST

**E**XTINCT animals are animals which no longer exist in a living state. Of course a vast number of individual animals, and men too, become extinguished, or extinct, in the course of every year, every month and every day.

But the extinct animals of which I wish to speak in these lectures are extinct *kinds* of animals, *kinds* of animals which no longer exist on the surface of the globe in a living state, although once they flourished and held their own.

We know of some of them by tradition. The records of men of past ages who have seen some animals, now extinct, and have written about them, and even drawn them, have by human care been passed on to the present day. We

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

know of other extinct animals by finding their bones buried in the ground, some quite near the surface, others deeper in the rocks, far down in the depths of the earth. Such bones may be dug out. There is a sample of such bones



FIG. 1.—A number of bones of extinct animals embedded in rock, from Pikermi near Athens. Photographed from a specimen in the Natural History Museum.

found buried in the earth, photographed as our first illustration (Fig. 1). Many of these bones have been so big, so huge, that they have led to the notion of the existence of giants in former days, it not having occurred, apparently, to those who

## GREAT AGE OF THEIR REMAINS

found them, that they were the bones of extinct animals and not of a great race of men.

The indications given by buried remains of a condition of the world which has passed away, as, for instance, in the great buried town of Pompeii, and some of the buried cities of Egypt, excite, when they are dug up, the greatest interest. From the records still preserved to us, we try to find out what was the meaning of the particular objects found, what were the nature and the life of the men to whom they belonged. The same kind of interest belongs to the remains of extinct animals that we dig up, only that many of them are far older than any remains of man ever found. We speak of the remains of an ancient Egyptian city as being some thousands of years old ; but the remains of many animals to which I shall have to refer in these lectures have to be estimated, not by thousands of years, but by millions of years ; so many years in fact that no numbers with which we are familiar will suffice to bring the facts to the minds of my readers.

Far down in the depths of the earth we find the remains, in a well-preserved condition, of the bones and teeth of such animals ; we are

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

able to tell what kind of animals they were, where they lived, what they fed upon, how they moved, and, in fact, their whole general appearance.

It is urged by some educationists—I myself do not agree with them—that we should present knowledge to young people in a logical order ; and that before talking to young or uninstructed people about extinct animals you ought to administer to them a complete course of instruction concerning living animals ; that beginners must learn the nature of the structure of living animals, and must study the geography and history of the crust of the ground in which the remains of extinct animals are found, before they can look with any intelligence on extinct animals. That is an opinion which exists. But I do not believe in such a method. The logical method of instruction or study is in my judgment a mistaken one. The whole art of education consists in exciting the desire to know. By showing something wonderful, mysterious, astonishing and marvellous, dug from the earth beneath our feet we may awaken the desire to understand and learn more about that thing. The strangeness of the bones and teeth of

## A FASCINATING SKULL

extinct animals will lead a boy or girl on to learning about the bones and teeth of living animals in order to make a comparison, and thus to learning more concerning the strange remains dug up. I believe that is usually the case. It certainly was the case with myself. When I was very young, younger than, or as young as any of my readers, I used to be taken by a very kind lady, my governess, to the Natural History Museum of the day, which was then in a remote part of London called Bloomsbury, whence it has been removed to Cromwell Road, Kensington. I was absolutely fascinated as a child with the remains I saw of strange extinct animals. And it is my hope that the boys and girls who read these pages may share some of this interest and fascination, and that they will pass from these lectures to see the actual specimens which are placed on view at the Natural History Museum. These lectures are indeed little more than a sort of invitation to you all to go and see the real things at Cromwell Road, of which I can only show you photographs in this book. I will now show you a portrait of a creature which has always fascinated me with its stony stare. It is the head of an Ichthyosaurus dug

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

out of the rock in the South of England, at Lyme Regis, many years ago (Fig. 2). The eye is peculiarly well preserved. The circle of bony plates, similar to those found in the eyes of birds, give an expression of interest which few fossils can boast of. It was dug out of the rocks by a wonderful lady, Miss Anning, who at the beginning of the last century secured a

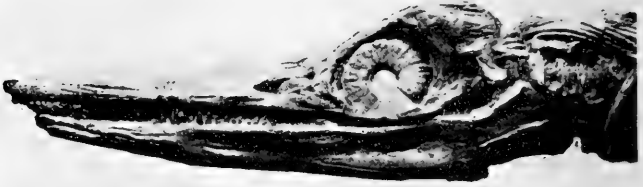


FIG. 2.—Head of an Ichthyosaurus, from the Liassic rocks of Lyme Regis. Photographed from the original specimen in the Natural History Museum. The head is three feet six inches long.

great number of such remains in the cliffs on the sea-shore. For many years the front part of this specimen was missing, but eventually it was found and dug out of the rocks. I shall have more to say later about creatures of this kind.

Another creature which fascinated me is shown here as it is exhibited in the East court

## THE GIANT SLOTH

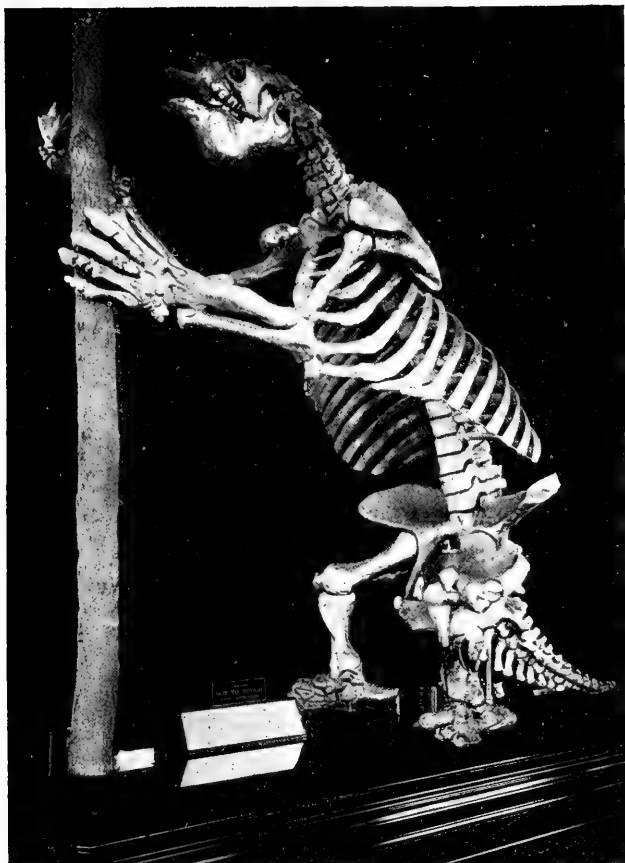


FIG. 3.—The skeleton of the Megatherium found in the alluvial sands of the Argentine Republic, South America. Photographed from the cast in the Natural History Museum. The skeleton stands fourteen feet high.



FIG. 4.—The skeleton of a gigantic extinct rat-like animal—the *Toxodon*—from the Argentine, South America. Length from the snout to the tail, nine feet. (This figure is lent by the Trustees of the British Museum).



## A LONDON RHINOCEROS

of the Museum (Fig. 3). It is similar in structure and nature to the sloth. But instead of living on a tree it stood on the ground, and pulled the tree down to it, in order to feed on the young branches. The skeletons of a great many of these huge sloths have been found in the gravel of South America.

Another strange great creature is revealed to us by this skeleton (Fig. 4), like a huge guinea pig with tremendous chisel-like teeth in front. It also is found in South America. This is the *Toxodon*.

The next picture (Fig. 5) I have here shows the skulls of two rhinoceroses. The lower one is the skull of an African rhinoceros, a living beast known as the square-mouthed or white rhinoceros—called white apparently, not because he is black, but in spite of the fact that he is black. As a matter of fact he sometimes has a number of white patches. But it suffices to know him as the square-mouthed rhinoceros.

The upper specimen is the skull and lower jaw of a rhinoceros, dug up last year in the City of London in Whitefriars, under the office of the well-known newspaper the *Daily Chronicle*. Digging in the mud and clay there,

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

the workmen came upon this rhinoceros skull. Many such have been found in English river

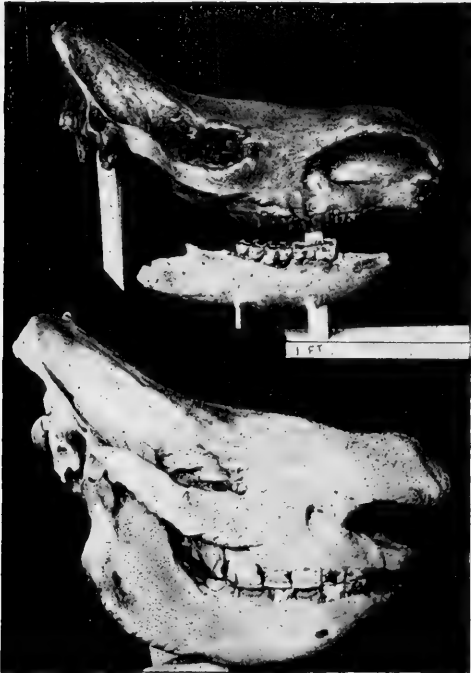


FIG. 5.—Photographs of two skulls of Rhinoceroses in the Natural History Museum. The upper one was dug out of the Thames clay in Whitefriars, London, and is that of the species known as *Rhinoceros antiquitatis*. The lower one is that of the living African square-mouthed Rhinoceros (*R. simus*), which is more like the fossil one than is any other living rhinoceros.

gravels, and we know accordingly that such animals used to exist on the banks of the



FIG. 6.—From a cast in the Natural History Museum. Photograph of the thigh-bone of the great extinct reptile, *Atlantosaurus*, from the Jurassic rocks of the United States of America. The thigh-bone is six feet in length : that of a very big elephant is barely four feet.

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

Thames many thousands of years ago. That specimen also is in the Natural History Museum.

Here (Fig. 6) you have a thigh bone ; you can see how enormous it is from the figure of the full-grown man beside it. That is the thigh bone of a huge kind of reptile, bigger than the ordinary elephant, or the biggest African elephant, without counting the reptile's tail. Such remains have been found in England ; but the largest have been found in the United States.

These are just a few samples of the remains of extinct animals, and indicate the kind of creatures I want to tell you about. Of course I cannot in these pages refer to all the many thousands of kinds of extinct animals which are known ; I can only hope to show you pictures of a few samples of these things, which, however, I hope will suffice to induce you to look further into the matter, to look at the real specimens, and to read more elaborate books, and thus come to feel the same interest and pleasure in examining them that I do myself.

The world upon the surface of which we live has been for millions of years always changing. Nothing is to-day as it was even one hundred

## INCESSANT CHANGES

years ago. A thousand years brings about enormous changes, quite a different state of things in fact. There are now cities where forests were growing. Animals which existed a thousand years ago have altogether gone. And this history of change has been going on, not merely for a thousand years, but for hundreds and thousands and millions of years. The changes have been incessant, and have been very great.

The difficulty in this study of extinct animals and in the geology connected with it is to think of long enough lapses of time. If you look at that clock you cannot see the hand moving, and yet it is moving. And thus even in a human lifetime you will hardly notice any difference in the rivers and the sea-shore and the cliffs. But if you range over a long enough time, say a thousand years or several thousands of years, and compare the condition which existed a thousand years ago with what exists to-day you will be able to observe great change. The difficulty is to realize this change, for it comes about too slowly for our short lives to give us any real definite experience of it, just as we fail to see the hands of the clock moving when

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

we glance at them for a second. Throughout these lectures I want you always to bear that in mind.

We know of animals even now which are becoming extinct. In this country we have

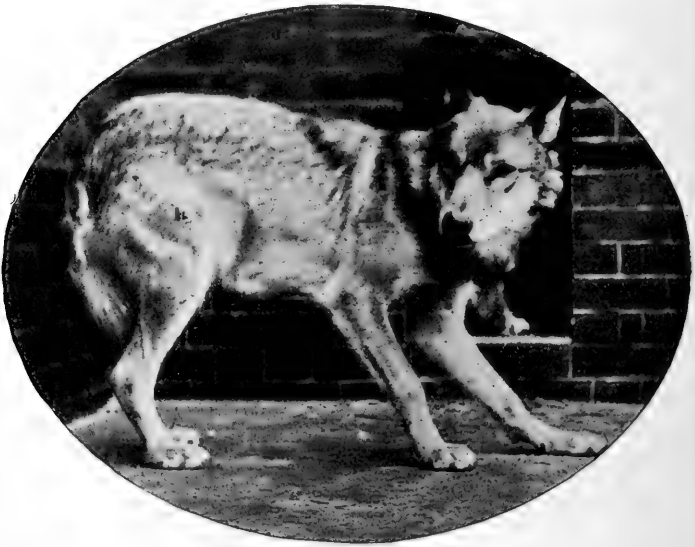


FIG. 7.—The Common Grey Wolf (*Canis lupus*) of Europe, once common in England, but now extinct there.

historical records of animals that have become extinct. I will show you one which used to exist in this country.

This creature, the grey wolf (Fig. 7), existed

## THE BEAVER



FIG. 8.—Photograph of a mounted specimen of the Beaver, from the Natural History Museum.

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

in England till the time of Henry VIII., at the end of the fifteenth century, and 150 years later in Scotland and Ireland. But it was entirely exterminated by human beings, on account of its rapacious and dangerous habits. Though it is extinct in England, it still exists in France, Spain, Germany and Russia.

Here is another animal (Fig. 8), the beaver, which used to exist in England, and was found as late as the sixteenth century in Wales. It still exists in France, on the banks of the streams at the mouth of the river Rhone; also in Russia and Scandinavia. In America, in Canada, beavers are still more abundant.

Another creature which, records tell us, existed all over Europe, and which has ceased to exist, is the great bull or Urus of Julius Caesar (Fig. 9). He mentions it as existing wild in different parts of Europe, and says it was nearly as big as an elephant. Well, no such great wild ox now exists in Europe. The last was killed near Warsaw in 1627. All we have now are the breeds derived partly from this, partly from other kinds of bulls, which, are quite changed in their general appearance. Some of the more or less wild cattle



## THE GREAT BULL OF CÆSAR

in different parts of England, for instance those on Lord Tanqueray's and the Duke of Hamilton's estates, are supposed by some persons to be the remains of this race of wild oxen. But this is probably a mistake. They are really

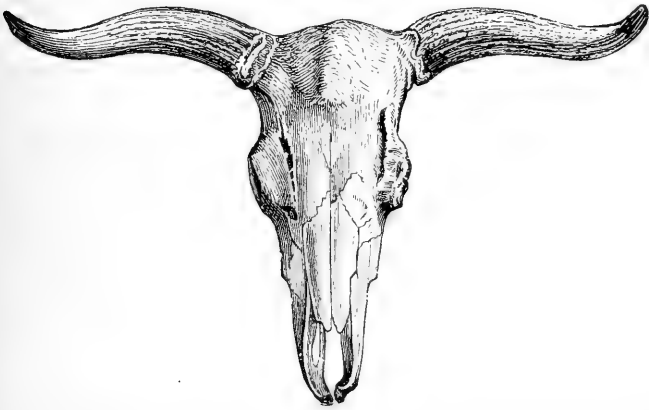


FIG. 9.—Skull of the great extinct Bull, the *Bos primigenius*, or the Urus, or Aurochs. The measurement from one horn-tip to the other taken round the curves, was in some cases eight feet. The Urus stood in rare instances as much as seven feet at the shoulder; a fair-sized Elephant stands nine feet.

the remains of cattle introduced by the Romans, and have run wild. They are not the Urus of Julius Caesar, which was a good deal bigger than the largest domesticated cattle, even bigger than the white oxen of Umbria.

This (Fig. 10) is another animal which has

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

become extinct. But it is not a zebra, as no doubt some of you thought it must be. This is the quagga, which differs from the zebra in being striped in front only. The quagga lived

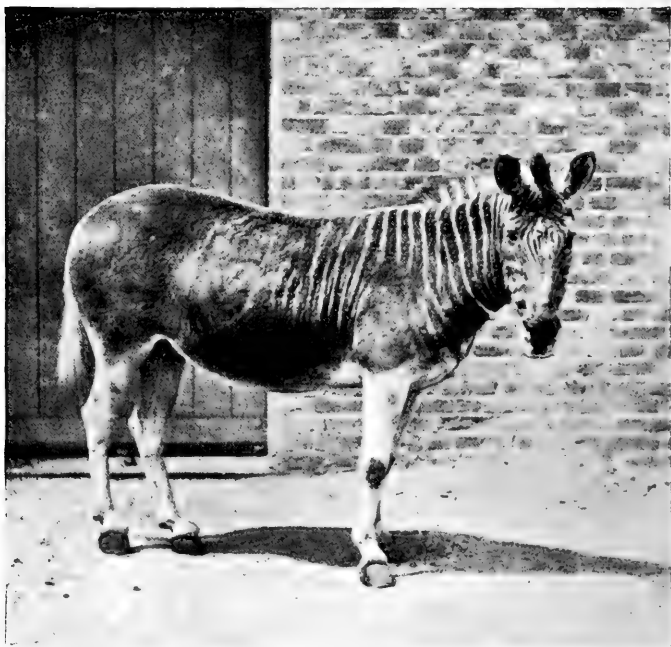


FIG. 10.—Photograph of the living Quagga (*Equus quagga*) in the gardens of the Zoological Society in 1875, now extinct.

in South Africa, and was quite common there until forty years ago. This photograph was taken from a specimen which lived in the

## THE ZEBRA

Zoological Gardens some twenty-five years ago.



FIG. 11.—Photograph of a living Zebra (*Equus burchelli*).

Its stuffed skin is preserved in the Natural History Museum. This creature has now en-

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

tirely ceased to exist, owing to the fact that the country over which it ranged has been taken up and cultivated by white men. There are no more living quaggas anywhere. This animal has become extinguished in our own lifetime. Zebras (Fig. 11), however, are still common enough in Africa, with their beautiful stripings on the head, and on the fore as well as on the hind regions of the body and legs.

Here is an animal which, it is feared, is becoming extinct—the giraffe (Fig. 12). In South Africa it has become extinct already. But sportsmen now seek it in Equatorial Africa. It is still existing in great numbers in that region, and we hope now will be properly protected by Government. Two new and well-mounted specimens have recently been put in the Natural History Museum. The neck of the giraffe is often represented as growing up from the body with a graceful curve, as is seen in the neck of the swan. But the true position of the neck is as you see here (Fig. 12). The specimens in the Natural History Museum shows this properly.

This is a picture (Fig. 13) of a curious creature, an animal known as the sea-cow, found in the Aleutian Islands, between North America and

## THE GIRAFFE

Asia. It was discovered by the traveller-

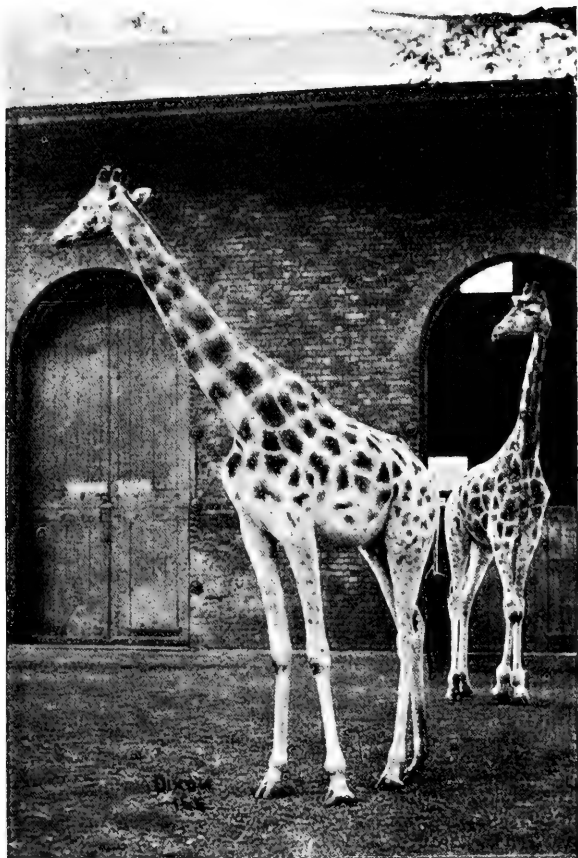


FIG. 12.—Photograph of two giraffes from life, showing the natural carriage of the head and neck.

naturalist Steller in the eighteenth century. It was no sooner found than sailors went to the

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

islands where it existed, knocked it on the head and ate it, and in about ten years it ceased to

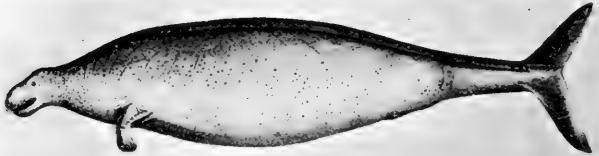


FIG. 13.—Steller's drawing of the Sea-cow discovered by him, and called *Rhytina Stelleri*. The animal was twenty feet long.

exist. This picture is from Steller's drawing. It is an enormous creature, some twenty feet

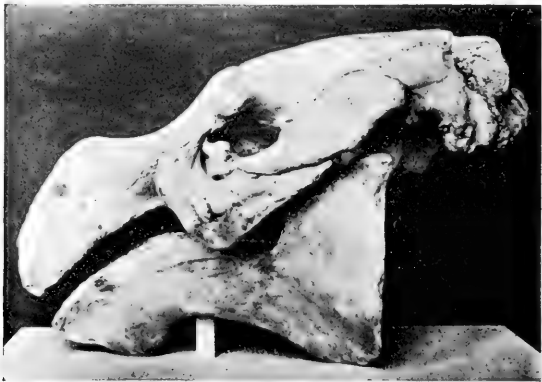


FIG. 14.—Photograph of a skull of Steller's Sea-cow, from a specimen in the Natural History Museum.

long, and in shape something like a seal. But it is not in reality a seal or a whale, but belongs

## THE GREAT AUK

to a peculiar group of vegetable-feeding marine animals, the Sirenians. It has a small head, flipper-like fins, no hind limbs, and a fish-like tail.



FIG. 15.—The Great Auk or Gare-fowl (*Alca impennis*). Photographed with its egg, from the specimens in the Natural History Museum.

The skull of the same animal is shown in Fig. 14. It has no teeth, but instead bony plates.

This is the picture of a celebrated animal (Fig. 15)—for you must understand that birds are animals. You will have been handed a list of the groups of animals (see the end of this chapter).

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

I shall not have space to explain it at any length, but it gives the division of animals into groups and their relation one to another. It shows how they are classified, so that I need not refer to the classification again.

This picture (Fig. 15) is the portrait of an interesting bird, the Great Auk. It is only about  $2\frac{1}{2}$  feet high. It is like the penguin in appearance, but it is really related to the puffin and albatross. Fig. 15A shews the egg, which from time to time in the newspapers, we read of as being sold to enthusiastic egg-collectors for as much as £300. Nearly a hundred specimens of the egg of this bird are known, for it only became absolutely extinct some sixty years ago. It used to be found on the rocky islands off the North of Scotland, Shetland, Iceland and Greenland. But it has now absolutely ceased to exist. It is very difficult to say why it died out, for it had not been hunted down. Since it has become extinct we have been able to get to know about it by finding its skeleton buried in sand and guano in certain places on the coast of Newfoundland.

Here (Fig. 16) is another creature, the dodo, a bird which, like Steller's sea-cow, became



## EGG OF THE GREAT AUK



FIG. 15A.—Egg of the Great Auk, of the natural size. Photographed from a specimen in the Natural History Museum.

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

extinct almost as soon as it became known. It was found in the island of Mauritius by the earlier explorers, first the Portuguese and then the Dutch. The bird was incapable of flying,

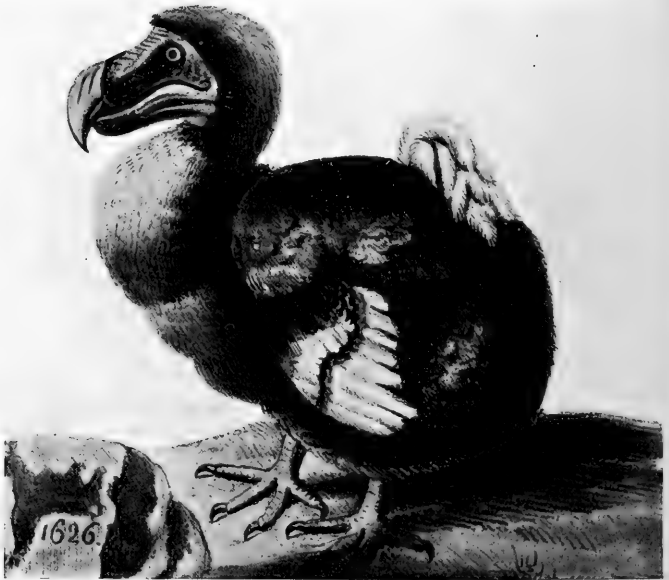


FIG. 16.—Reproduction of a picture of the Dodo, painted by Roland Savery from life, in 1626. The bird was about three feet long from beak to tail.

as it was too fat for its little wings to lift it from the ground. It was knocked on the head by the sailors and worried by the pigs they introduced, and was soon exterminated. About the beginning of the seventeenth century, between

## THE DODO

1610 and 1620, specimens were brought alive to Europe and were exhibited as a show. We once possessed at Oxford a stuffed specimen, secured by that ingenious and worthy gentleman



FIG. 17.—A nearly complete skeleton of the Dodo, put together from bones collected by Mr. George Clark in a marshy pool in Mauritius. In front is seen the dried foot of a specimen which was brought alive to Europe about the year 1600. The foot and the skeleton are in the Natural History Museum.

Mr. Elias Ashmole, who gave his collections to the university 250 years ago. But as it became mouldy and eaten by insects, it was ordered, a hundred years ago, by the Vice-Chancellor and

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

Proctors of the University of Oxford, that the specimen of the dodo should be destroyed. They do not like mouldy things at Oxford. But the curator cut off the head and one foot, and kept them. This head and foot, together with another foot in London, and a skull in Copenhagen, are about all we have left of dodos seen in the living state by Europeans. But since the dodo became extinct, by digging in the mud of a lake in Mauritius skeletons and bones of it have been found (Fig. 17).

This (Fig. 18) is another interesting creature, whose kind is on the way to extinction. It is probably the oldest living terrestrial animal. It was brought from the Seychelles, where its kind is rapidly becoming extinct. In different oceanic islands such tortoises have been found of large size. This specimen was brought in 1764 to the island of Mauritius, and is still alive there. Thus it has been 140 years in captivity in the Court House Garden, in the Mauritius; and how old it was when brought there it is impossible to say.

A question of great interest is—"What makes animals become extinct?" It is obvious in many cases that another animal, Man, inter-

## WHY DO ANIMALS BECOME EXTINCT ?

feres. He either kills and eats animals, or takes their food from them, or occupies their ground, or cuts down the forests in which they live, and so on. But before man appeared on the scene there were changes going on, and different



FIG. 18.—The living Giant Tortoise of the Court House, Mauritius, more than 150 years old.

kinds of animals succeeded one another. We know this by finding the remains of different animals at different depths in the crust of the earth, in the different strata which have succeeded one another. The cause of these changes, the cause of the extinction of animals,

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

is a very elaborate and difficult question, and one which I do not propose to deal with at any length. It is connected, of course, with the whole doctrine of the origin of the different kinds of animals. We all recognize now that there has been a gradual development of the different forms of animals by natural birth, from ancestral forms more or less like themselves. But the more remote we get from the present day, in the line of descent, the less like are the ancestors to the present form. The original parental forms have given rise to very different branches of descent. The descendants of one ancestral form have branched out in different directions: just in the same way as some person named Smith at the time of the Conqueror has given rise to all sorts of Smiths. Some of them perhaps are still actually metal-workers, others have become Ministers of State and Right Honourable judges; others have great possessions; but they can all be traced back to the one original Smith. So many living animals of various appearance and form can be traced back to one ancient ancestral form, and these again to other more primitive ancestral forms.

## CHANGES OF LAND AND WATER

The reason why the ancestral forms died out is really connected with the general change in the surface of the earth. New forms have gradually taken the place of the old forms—for no piece of land remains the same for many years. A thousand years, as I have said, in this matter is merely nothing, but even in a thousand years we get great changes in the surface of the land. Land may rise far above the sea, and what was an island become part of a continent. And what was part of a continent may partly sink, and become an island—that is, the connexion between it and the continent may become covered with water; and then the conditions of life for the animals are very much changed. Such currents as the Gulf Stream are affected by this alteration in land and water. Were certain changes to take place, the warm water of the Gulf Stream would no longer warm certain land; the climate would become colder than the animals have been accustomed to. The animals that could not stand the cold would die out, whilst those that could stand the cold would flourish.<sup>1</sup> All I

<sup>1</sup> A fish—the Tile-fish—living in the Atlantic, near the North American coast, was destroyed in this way a few

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

would say is that changes in the disposition of land and water have been a great cause in changing the forms of animals and in bringing about the extinction of one set and the flourishing of another set. That this rising and sink-



FIG. 19.—The ruins of the ancient Roman public buildings at Puzzuoli (Puteoli) near Naples. The three celebrated columns are seen on the left.

ing of the surface of the land really takes place I will try now to give you evidence.

Here (Fig. 19) is the photograph of the Temple at Puzzuoli, near Naples, on the shore years ago by millions. It was feared it might have become extinct, but the cold current having again changed, its numbers have increased once more.



# THE ROMAN REMAINS AT PUZZUOLI

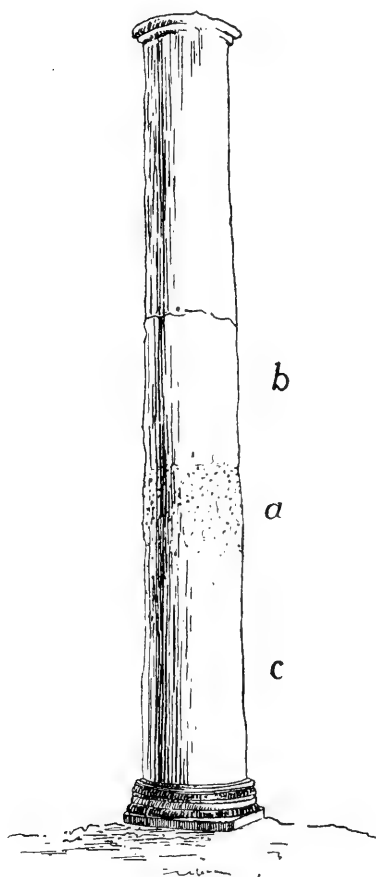


FIG. 20.—One of the three columns of the “temple” at Puzzuoli showing (*a*) the portion eaten into by boring marine clam-shells, (*b*) the upper part, which was not submerged, and (*c*) part which was probably covered up by sea-sand and mud during submersion.

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

of the Gulf of Naples. This has been celebrated for something like eighty years, ever since Mr. Babbage carefully examined and described it, and thus caused it to be largely visited by geologists. In common with most geologists, I have had the pleasure of visiting it. The three standing columns have marks of discoloration up to a certain height. The lower part, as shown in the diagram (Fig. 20), is full of little holes in which tiny sea creatures have burrowed holes in which there are small shells. This is so defined that it is certain these columns have stood in sea water up to that line. The evidence of that is quite complete. These columns formed part of a Temple or public palace in the great Roman town of Puteoli, which had in front of it a Roman road along by the sea-shore. Between the temple and the sea was the road. Now in Roman times that temple stood complete and very much in the same position relatively to the sea-level that it does to-day, but rather higher up. Mr. Günther, of Oxford, examining the shore-line carefully, has found covered over by the sea the remains of the Roman road, and the remains of great blocks to which ships were

## THE ROMAN TOWN PUTEOLI

moored when they brought their wares to the town of Puteoli. I have here made a drawing of the town and the great public palace as it must have appeared in Roman times (Fig. 21). In the distance is the island of Nicida; in the foreground we have the palace and the town, the

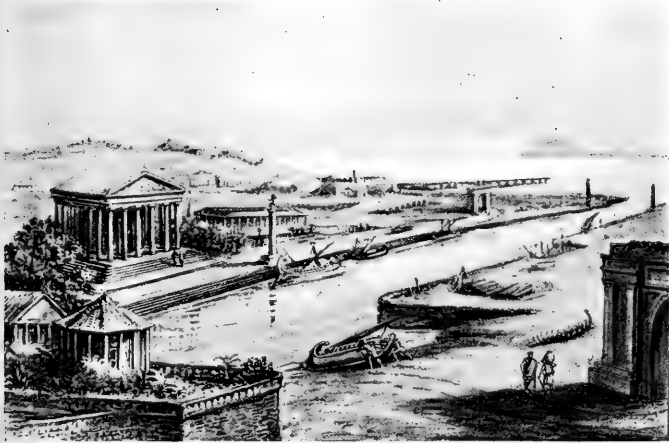


FIG. 21.—Puzzuoli or Puteoli in the time of the Roman Empire (third century). The dock and public buildings are represented.

quay and harbour. Things existed thus in the days of the Roman empire, in the third century of our era. Then earthquakes occurred, the columns were broken, the city sank beneath the sea. We have no written history of this town. But it is known that in the Middle Ages, in the

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

eighth or ninth century, the whole of the coast of this part of Italy had sunk many feet, and the columns were broken and standing in the sea. This is the appearance then presented by Puteoli (Fig. 22). The coast had sunk; the remains of the road were covered by sea, and also the



FIG. 22.—Puzzuoli in the ninth century, showing the submergence of the land and the columns of the ruined temple or palace standing up in the sea.

remains of the columns up to the height marked *a* on the diagram (Fig. 20). The whole land must have sunk as much as forty feet, since the temple or palace stood on high ground originally. Then it was that, while they were under water in the ninth century, the columns

## THE MODERN PUZZUOLI

were bored into by sea-shells. Now some more centuries have elapsed ; the ground has risen again until we have the condition shown in the photograph (Fig. 23), which gives a general view of the same region as that drawn by the use of the imagination in Figs. 21 and 22. The



FIG. 23.—Photograph of Puzzuoli at the present day showing the three columns of the so-called temple of Serapis, as now seen after the retreat of the sea due to the re-elevation of the land.

land rose again from the water. But the sea left its mark on the columns, showing exactly how deeply they were merged in the intervening centuries.

This is considered one of the clearest and most direct proofs of the changes which take

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

place in the level of the ground. The change need not be a continuous or a rapid one. It took some two or three centuries for that temple to sink into the water, and a few more centuries for it to come out again.

Such movement is always going on. It does not occur very obviously on our own coast. It can be seen to some extent on the Devonshire coast at Plymouth. You get evidence of it in what are called raised beaches above the level of the ocean. In Norway this kind of thing is very obvious. In South America it is going on, and has been going on at an enormous rate for the last thousand years. Probably a great part of the height of the Andes has been acquired within the last few thousand years by rapid rising. When the original sailors landed on the coast of Chili in the sixteenth century or thereabouts they are said in one spot to have chiselled on the rocks an inscription. Here you see an imaginary sketch of them doing so (Fig. 24). It is said, but I cannot find any accurate record of it, that such inscriptions have been discovered now, raised high up on the cliff (see Fig. 25). We know that many kinds of sea-shells are found 200 and 300 feet up the cliffs

## THE COAST OF CHILI

in this part of the world. According to the observations that have been made, the original inscription which we see the sailors cutting in Fig. 24 would, after 300 years, be found high and dry some 150 feet up the face of the cliffs. On the coast of South America there is good



FIG. 24.—Imaginary view of Spanish sailors carving an inscription on rocks at sea-level in 1600 A.D., on the Chilean coast.

reason for believing that a movement upwards goes on at the rate of half a foot to a foot a year. If such a rising continued for a thousand years we should find that the original shore-line had risen 500 feet above the sea-level.

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

What, then, is the general result of such movement? I will show you what would be the result of elevating the shore of England (the whole of this part of the world) 600 feet. From this map (Fig. 26) you will see that if the



FIG. 25.—The same rocks as they would appear in 1900, raised 150 feet above the sea-level by an imperceptible movement of six inches a year.

floor of the ocean were raised 600 feet, the cross-shaded area would become dry land, and we should be brought by land into contact with the neighbouring continent and islands. And if the land were raised 3,000 feet we should have a still greater extension of dry



# ELEVATION OF THE SEA-BOTTOM

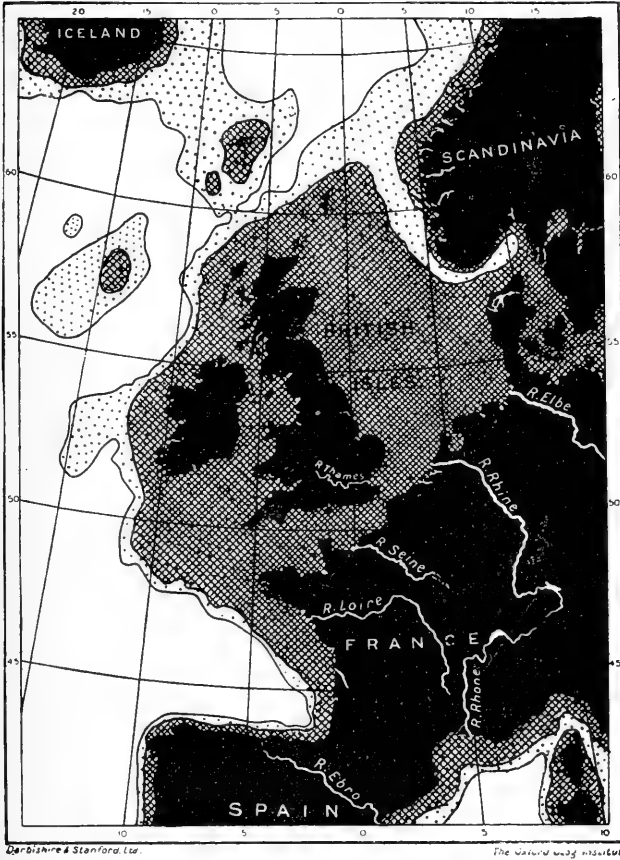


FIG. 26.—Map to show the effect of elevation of the earth's surface on the distribution of land and water in Western Europe. The *doubly-cross-shaded* area shows what would become dry land if the sea-bottom were raised 600 feet. The Channel, the German Ocean, the Baltic and the Irish Sea, cease to exist. The smaller dotted area would become dry land if the sea-bottom rose another 2,400 feet. Men could then walk from Scotland to Iceland by way of the Shetlands and Faroe Islands. Most noticeable is the great change which would be brought about by the comparatively small rise of 600 feet, and the much greater elevation required to change any further the contour of the land.

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

land. Even the smaller change would make England part of the Continent of Europe.

The study of extinct animals found in the various strata of the earth enables one to arrive at a notion of the distribution of land and water in past time. Here is an arrangement of land and water which we are able to conclude must have existed in Europe in what is called the Middle Tertiary period (Fig. 27). All this darker part is the sea, and the pale part land: in fact, the distribution is quite different from what it is at the present time. The whole surface of the earth has been shifting and changing all through time. During the millions and millions of years of past ages, different seas have arisen, different continents, different dry land and different animals,—changed by the various influences of the land and climate. And all this movement is accomplished by the slow cracking and “curling” of the earth’s crust, by the continual washing of the surface of the land by rain and rivers, by the eating away of the edge of the land by the waves of the sea. This “eating away” of the land by the sea—quite apart from any sinking of the land-level—has caused and is yearly

## ANCIENT LANDS AND SEAS

causing great loss of land on the east coast of England, especially in Suffolk, where the great city of Dunwich has been swallowed up by the sea. In other parts the sea throws up sand and

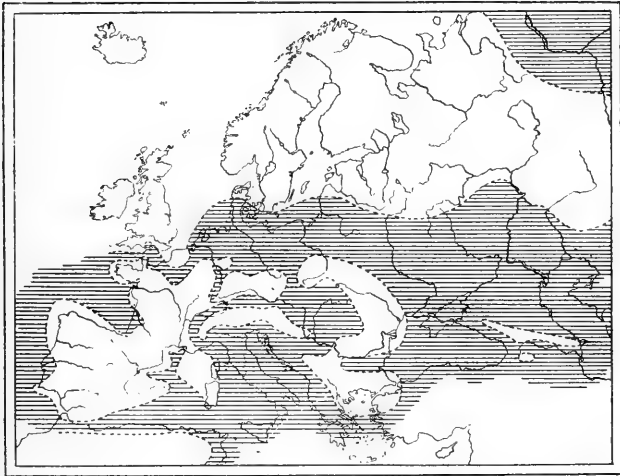


FIG. 27.—The real test of Geology: an attempt to determine the distribution of land and water in past ages. The period here shown is the Oligocene or Middle Tertiary, the area is that of our present Europe. The sea is shaded, the land areas are left white. Central and Southern Europe was a sea, with a few large islands in it. North Europe formed a continent including the British Islands and Iceland. (After Lapparent.)

adds miles of new land to the coast. The immense quantity of stuff which is carried off the surface by rains and rivers is difficult at first to imagine. Taking the river Thames at Kingston, it is found that something like 500,000

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

tons of solid salts of lime in solution is carried every year past that spot. Now a cubic block of limestone measuring a yard in each dimension weighs about two tons. Accordingly, 250 thousand solid cubic yards of rock are carried past Kingston every year by this little river! Enough to build a new St. Paul's Cathedral every year! Think, then, what must be the enormous quantities of solid matter dissolved and carried away by such rivers as the Mississippi and the Amazon. And remember that in addition to this dissolved limestone there is almost as large a bulk of fine sand and mud carried along by most rivers! What becomes of it? It is deposited in layers, and forms what we call stratified rock. You see it, some of it, on the seashore when the tide goes back, in the form of layers of sand, but most of it is deposited far out in the deep bottom of the sea—the lime being taken out of solution by shell-making plants and animals. But where the land is rising, the sand or ground which is exposed when the tide goes back, would after a few years have been raised away from the sea and become hard rock. Layer after layer is imposed and raised from the sea bottom. Without

## STRATIFIED DEPOSITS

going into detail we may accept as a fact that this formation of layers by stuff brought down from the land by rivers and washed from the coast-line by the sea waves gives rise to what are called "stratified deposits." I will now show you some pictures of this stratification. Here (Fig. 28) are shells

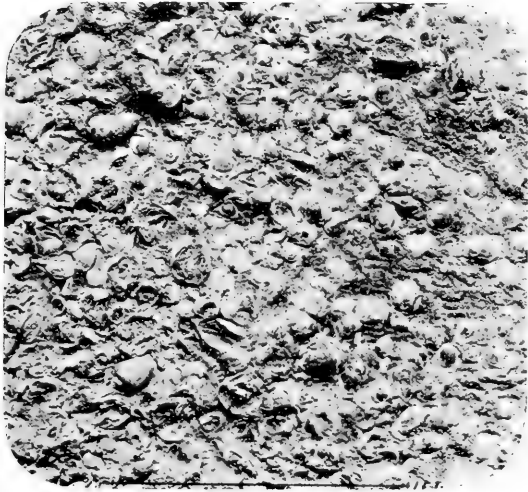


FIG. 28.—Photograph of a slab of Bognor rock (Lower Eocene) showing embedded marine shells.

embedded in the Bognor rocks deposited some thousand million years ago ; there are many sorts of shells, whelk-like shells and volute shells embedded here.

Whole skeletons of animals are sometimes

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

found in the stratified deposits. This one (Fig. 29) is from stratified rock which forms the hills round Paris, the calcareous rocks of Montmartre.

Next let us see what fine mud will do in

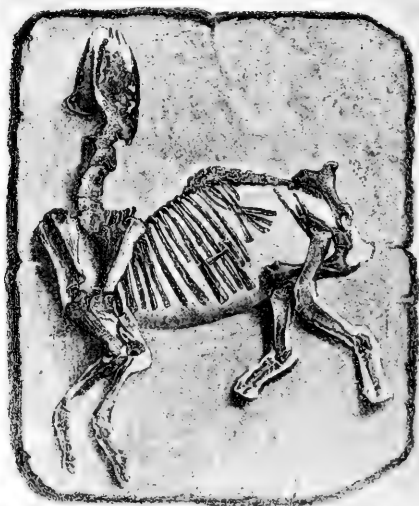


FIG. 29.—Skeleton of a tapir-like animal (*Palæotherium*) as found embedded in calcareous rock at Montmartre, Paris.

preserving the impression of delicate structures, such as the wings of insects. Here are the wings of a dragon fly (Fig. 30), preserved in very ancient stratified rock, the Carboniferous. Here (Fig. 31) are the wings of the Pterodactyle

## FOSSILIZED WINGS

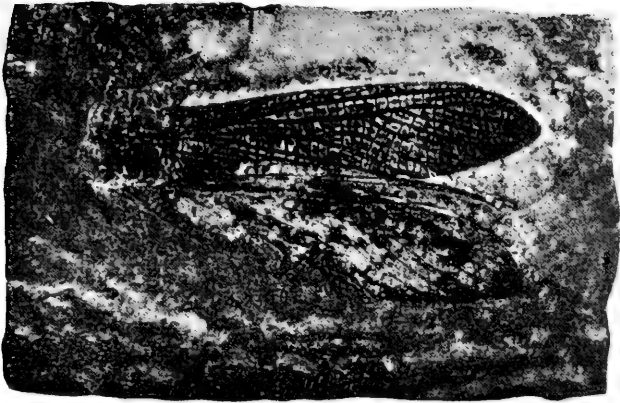


FIG. 30.—Wings of a Dragon-fly preserved in the ancient limestone of the Carboniferous period or Coal-bearing rocks.

preserved in fine sandy limestone of Oolitic age. Here (Fig. 32) we have a jelly-fish preserved ;

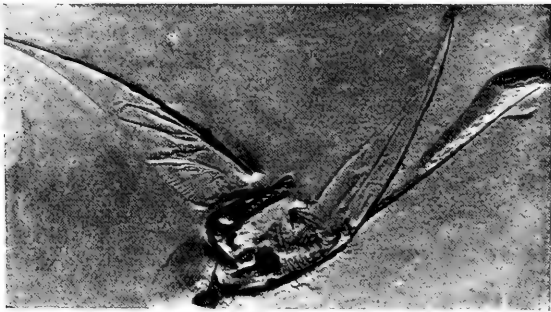


FIG. 31.—Pterodactyle skeleton preserved in Lithographic limestone, showing the impression of the membrane of the wings.

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

you see its seal stamped as it were on the sand. It is many millions of years old, from Oolitic rock.

Now let us look at the layers or the stratification of rocks. This picture (Fig. 33) shows part of the cliff at Lyme Regis, where the Ichthyosaurus-head, which I showed you just



FIG. 32.—A Jelly-fish (similar to the recent *Aurelia aurita*) preserved in Lithographic limestone.

now, was found. We see the layers of harder and softer material lying one over the other. The next figure (Fig. 34) shows how the layers of the surface of the earth may be bent. Without digging far into the earth you may reach a deep layer of stratification or “stratum” brought near the surface by the general tilting.



## TILTING OF STRATA

This (Fig. 34) is part of the chalk cliff at Seaford, showing the strata tilted, so that the deeper layers come to the surface.

Here (Fig. 35) is part of the shore of Lyme Regis, showing the strata exposed by the action



FIG. 33.—Alternate layers of hard and soft rock ("strata") forming the sea-cliff at Lyme Regis. Photographed by Messrs. Dollman Bros.

of the sea. A long series of superimposed layers one on top of the other is seen. They are slightly tilted, so that the deeper strata come to the surface near the observer.

The tilting of the strata of the earth's crust

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

is the rule and not the exception. It is rare for the strata to lie in a strictly horizontal position. The crust of the earth is continually being slowly pushed up or down, and as it were “crumpled” or thrown into wave-like folds. The cause of this crumpling is to be found in

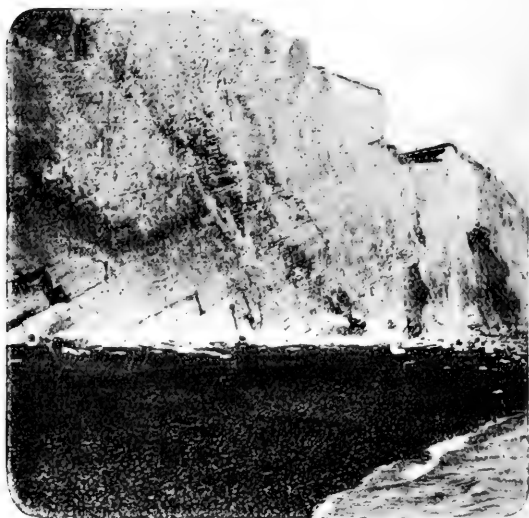


FIG. 34.—Tilted strata of the chalk at Seaford, Sussex. Photographed by Messrs. Dollman Bros.

the shrinking of the earth and the movements of subterranean steam—causing earthquakes and other earth movements. The “crust” of the earth is a mere skin. If we bored twenty miles into it we should come to immensely hot

## FOLDING AND CRUMPLING OF STRATA

molten material, and on this the crust is supported. It cannot be said to “rest” on the deeper matter, for it is always, though very, very slowly, shifting and crumpling. Consequently, according to the height and depth of



FIG. 35.—Strata of the cliff at Lyme Regis. Photographed by Messrs. Dollman Bros.

the folds of the crust, we find that deeper, even very deep-lying strata may be brought to the surface, and as the upraised folds get worn away by sea and rain and rivers, the deepest layers may be exposed on the surface. Thus it is that we are able to examine the oldest rocks

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

and to search for the remains of the immensely-

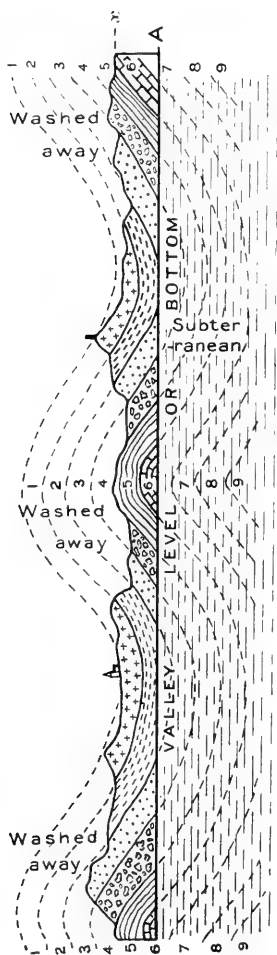


FIG. 36.—Diagram to show the effect of the bending or undulation of the earth's crust. A line (A) marks the level or bottom of a valley on the earth's surface. The successive strata are marked from above downwards 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 7, 8, 9. The dotted lines mark the former continuation of the upheaved strata which has been washed away, thus exposing strata as deep as No. 5 on the surface and by the formation of "cliffs" or "escarpments" exposing even No. 7 to view. If we continued our exploration along the same line beyond the limit of the diagram, we should probably find strata 8 and 9, and even deeper layers, brought to the surface by the bending or undulation of the once horizontal layers.

ancient creatures which they contain. The

## RIPPLE-MARKS AND RAIN-DROPS

diagram (Fig. 36) will help to make it clear how the pushing and crushing of the earth's crust into wave-like folds such as you may see when a tablecloth or carpet is not spread flat, results in bringing the deep-lying strata to the surface, so that we can walk along a cutting or cliff and come to deeper and older rocks as we walk along.

Here (Fig. 37) is a specimen which shows



FIG. 37.—Ripple-marks preserved in ancient Triassic strata.

ripple-marks still preserved as we see them nowadays on the shore at low tide. The marks of raindrops are also often preserved on such slabs of rock, which once were soft wet sand. On such surfaces we often find footprints, the footprints of birds and of reptiles. In some cases we do not know the animal itself (Fig. 38),

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

but we see its footprints in the ancient rocks now far removed from the sea and covered over by thousands of feet of later rocks. Here (Fig. 39) are the footprints of a great creature

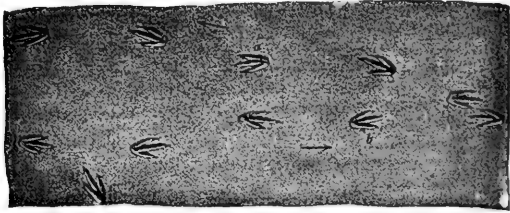


FIG. 38.—Bird-like footprints on a slab of Triassic rock from Connecticut, U.S.A.

from the Isle of Wight which has left its impress in the sandstone.

In Fig. 40 we have drawn a slab of Triassic

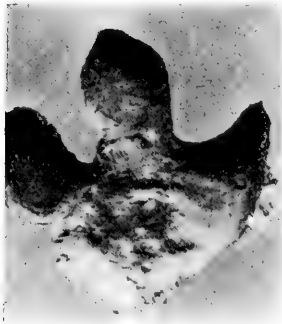


FIG. 39.—Three-toed footprint (probably of Iguanodon) from the Wealden Sandstone of the Isle of Wight.

## FOOTPRINTS ON ANCIENT SANDS

rock, showing the five-fingered hand-like footprints of the Cheirotherium (as it was once called), a huge salamander-like animal.

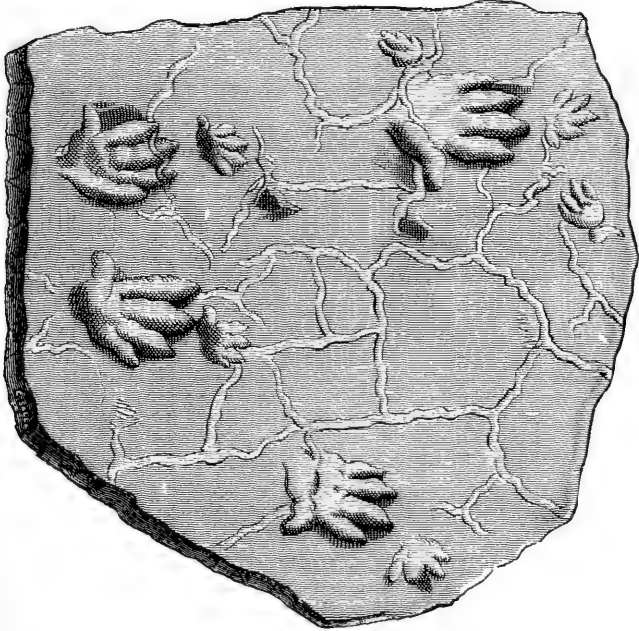


FIG. 40.—Slab of Triassic rock from Saxony, showing hand-like five-fingered footprints, each seven inches long, probably due to a Labyrinthodon which walked over this substance when it was soft wet sand. These footprints occur also in rocks of the same age in Cheshire.

# TABULAR LIST

## OF THE GREAT GROUPS OR BRANCHES OF THE PEDIGREE OF ANIMALS

- I. VERTEBRATA. (Back-boned Animals.)  
Class 1. MAMMALS.  
2. BIRDS.  
3. REPTILES.  
4. AMPHIBIANS.  
5. FISHES.  
6, 7 and 8. Lancelets, Ascidians and  
Acorn-Worms.
- II. MOLLUSCS. (Mussels, Oysters, Clams, Snails,  
Slugs, Whelks and Cuttle-fish.)
- III. APPENDICULATES. (Insects, Crabs, Shrimps,  
Spiders, Scorpions, Centipedes, and Annulate  
Worms and Wheel-animalcules.)
- IV. ECHINODERMS. (Starfishes, Sea Urchins and  
Sea-Cucumbers.)
- V. FLAT WORMS. (Flukes, Tape-Worms, Water-  
flukes, etc.)
- VI. NEMERTINES. (Cord-like Sea-Worms.)
- VII. NEMATODS. (Parasitic Thread-Worms.)
- 
- VIII. CORAL-POLYPS and SEA-ANEMONES.
- IX. HYDRA-POLYPS and JELLY FISH.
- 
- X. SPONGES.
- 
- XI. PROTOZOA. (Microscopic Unicellular Animalcules,  
Amœbæ, Gregarines, Flagellates, etc.)

N.B.—*The list does not contain the less important great groups, and is purposely made more simple than are the tables of classification used in scientific text-books.*



## TABULAR LIST

OF THE CHIEF ORDERS OF THE VERTEBRATE CLASS  
MAMMALS.

Order	1	Primates	Man, Apes and Monkeys.
	„	2 Insectivors	Hedgehogs, Shrews and Moles.
	„	3 Chiroptera	Bats.
	„	4 Carnivors	Dogs, Bears, Cats and the extinct Creodonts.
	„	5 Pinnipedes	Seals.
	„	6 Ungulates	Hoofed Animals : even-toed and odd-toed.
	„	7 Elephants	Elephants and their extinct ances- tors.
	„	8 Amblypods	Dinoceras and Arsinöotherium.
	„	9 Toxodonts	Toxodon.
	„	10 Rodents	Rats, Rabbits, Beavers and Porcu- pines.
	„	11 Hyracoids	The Syrian and African “Coney.”
	„	12 Sirenians	The Manatee, Dugong and Steller’s Sea-Cow.
—			
	„	13 Edentates	Sloths, Armadilloes, Ant-eaters.
	„	14 Cetaceans	Whales and Porpoises.
—			
	„	15 Marsupials	Kangaroos, Opossums, Tasmanian Wolf.
—			
	„	16 Cloacals	The Egg-laying Platypus and Echidna of Australia.

N.B.—*The list is not complete*

## TABULAR LIST

### OF THE CHIEF ORDERS OF THE VERTEBRATE CLASS REPTILES.

Order 1	Dinosaurs	Huge extinct creatures, often as big as elephants.
„ 2	Crocodiles	Crocodiles and Alligators.
„ 3	Chelonians	Turtles and Tortoises.
„ 4	Lizards	} Closely allied to one another, and having the epiderm moulded to form “scales.”
„ 5	Snakes	
„ 6	Pterodactyls	Extinct : they had great flying wings supported by one finger.
„ 7	Theromorphs	Extinct : often with teeth resembling those of Mammals.
„ 8	Plesiosaurs	Extinct : swan-necked aquatic forms, with four paddles.
„ 9	Ichthyosaurs	Extinct : short-necked marine forms, closely representing among Reptiles, the Whales and Porpoises of the Mammalian series.

N.B.—*This does not profess to be a complete enumeration.*

## CHAPTER II

STRATA AND LAND SURFACES — TEETH AND  
BONES — EXTINCT MEN — FLINT IMPLE-  
MENTS—THE MAMMOTH, ELEPHANTS AND  
MASTODON—CLASSIFICATION OF ANIMALS

**B**EFORE giving you further accounts of extinct animals, I wish to point out to you that what I have to say is true, and not mere imagination.

Some people talk about the “fairy tales of science.” There never was a more inappropriate phrase: it is altogether wrong to speak of fairy tales having anything to do with science. The wonderful things which science reveals to us are altogether remote from fairy tales, for in regard to the tales of science you can test what you are told, you can see the things of which I speak, you can ascertain the truth of what is asserted. That is the great pleasure of this study; one knows that the things one examines, however astounding and

# TABLE OF STRATIFIED ROCKS

SHOWING APPROXIMATE THICKNESS.

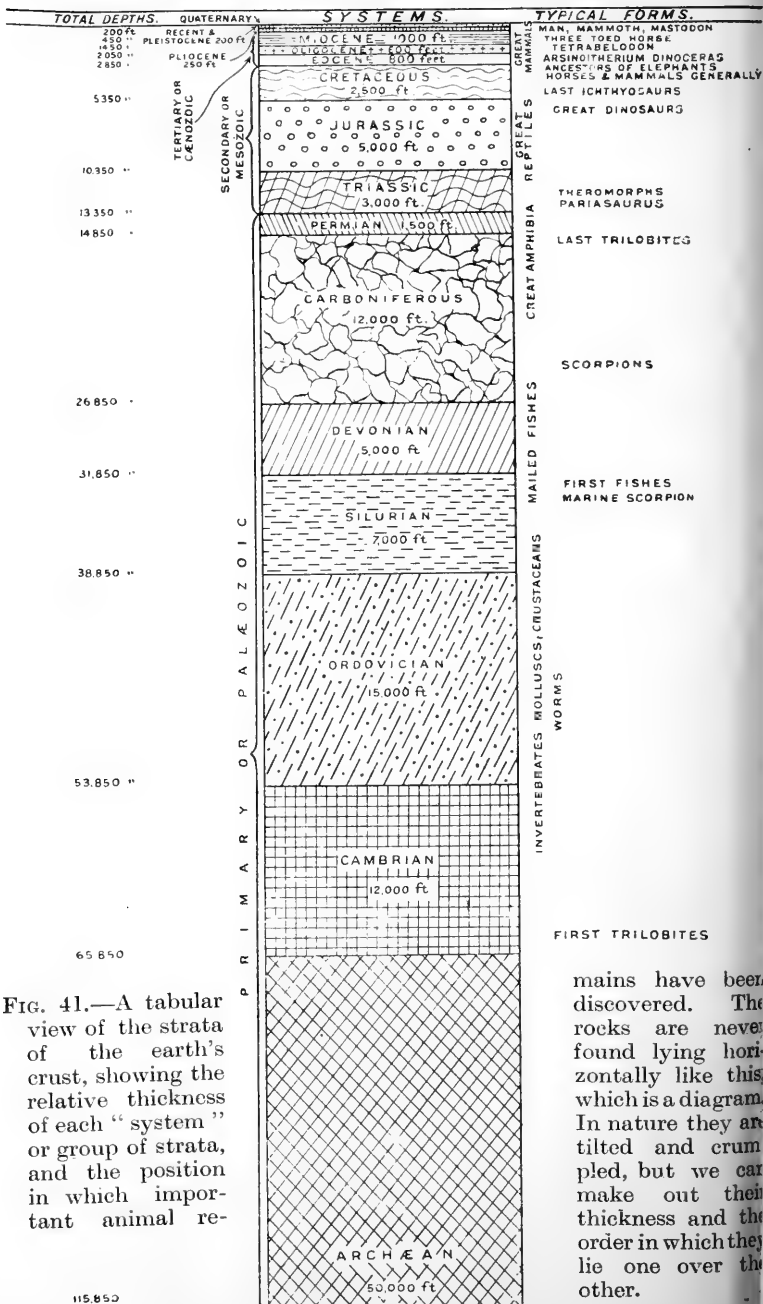


FIG. 41.—A tabular view of the strata of the earth's crust, showing the relative thickness of each "system" or group of strata, and the position in which important animal re-

mains have been discovered. The rocks are never found lying horizontally like this, which is a diagram. In nature they are tilted and crumpled, but we can make out their thickness and the order in which they lie one over the other.

## THE SUCCESSION OF STRATIFIED ROCKS

incredible they seem, really exist, and are not mere imagination or fancy.

I want now to refer to these large diagrams (Figs. 41 and 42). Fig. 41 should be carefully examined. It represents what has been discovered with regard to the succession of deposits, those stratified deposits of which I spoke in my last lecture. On the left-hand side is stated the thickness of each deposit, so far as it has been ascertained.

Most of the extinct animals, all the great extinct animals I have to speak about, come within the upper part. We have an enormous thickness of stratified rock beneath, which contains only marine things, fishes, a few crustaceans, and things of that kind. But all the more interesting great animals have left their bones in the higher strata. The uppermost layer (the recent and Pleistocene) is only some 200 feet in thickness, yet it indicates a period of something like 500,000 years. This being so, you can judge by the thickness of subjacent deposits what an immense lapse of time is represented. Before we get to the chalk we get down nearly 3,000 feet. The thickness of the chalk itself is another 2,500 feet.

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

The estimate thus given probably does not fully represent the time which has elapsed. If you take a thousand years for each foot, you only get an approximate measure of the time represented, because a great deal more time has passed than is actually shown by the permanent deposits or strata. Strata have been broken up by the sea and water, and have been deposited again and again ; and it is probable that a much longer time has elapsed than one thousand years for each foot of the deposits which form the stratified crust of the earth.

An important general fact, which I cannot dwell on further, is that whilst it is true that the great animals occur in the later stage of the world's history, there is a gradual succession from simpler to more complex forms of life. We get fishes at the top of the Silurian ; and we get in the Carboniferous great amphibians ; and the first reptiles in the Permian ; and then we get birds and crocodiles in the Triassic ; and the first hairy warm-blooded quadrupeds in the Jurassic. Thus the different kinds of animals succeed one another in the order of increasing complexity of structure so that the highest animals are the latest to appear.

# THE ZOO-GEOGRAPHICAL MAP

This map of the world (Fig. 42) has special

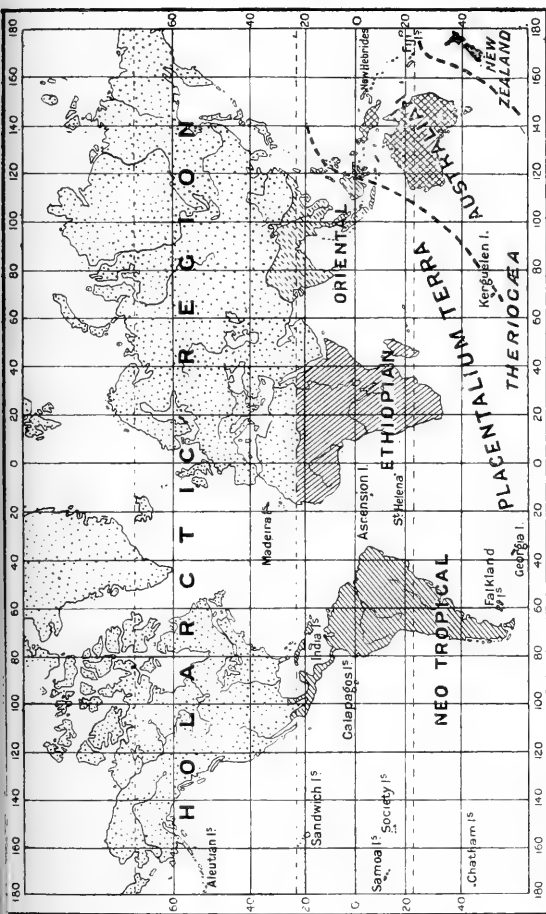


FIG. 42.—Map of the World, showing its division into great provinces and regions characterised by the presence of different kinds of animals. The first division is into (a) New Zealand and (b) Therioga. Then Therioga is divided into Australia and the Placentium Terra. Lastly the Placentium Terra is divided into the four regions, viz. (1) the Holarctic, (2) the Neo-tropical, (3) the Ethiopian, and (4) the Oriental.

interest, for it shows the present position of different kinds of animals. It is meant to show

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

something of the history of the migrations or movements over the surface of the earth of the large animals which have lived upon it. The line which separates New Zealand from the rest of the world, which we call Theriogæa—the land of big animals—shows that the large islands of New Zealand have no such animals upon them. Till man went there some thousand years ago there were no large animals. The largest animals were great birds. There were no cattle, or cats and dogs—not even mice. Thus this piece of land seems to be separated from the history of the movement of animals in the rest of the world. It is an old and detached land-surface. Then you will see a second line between Australia and the rest of the world.

Australia is distinguished by its marsupials (kangaroos, wombats, phalangers, etc.). The young of the marsupials are very small when born and are placed by their mother in a pouch of skin overlying her teats. Those animals which are nourished inside the mother before they are born are of a much larger size at birth. They are the Placentals, and there are no aboriginal Placentals in Australia.

The greater part of the world (the rest when



## THE ZOOLOGICAL PROVINCES

Australia is cut off) may be divided into the great Holarctic surface, the northern strip which comprises North America, Europe and the Northern part of Asia, while projecting downwards are three other regions, South America or the Neo-tropical, the great African or Ethiopian region, and the Oriental or Indian region. The animals of which fossil remains are found in the Holarctic region have migrated into these projections of the land which subsequently became of their present shape, at different times in the world's history.

The Neo-tropical region of South America was at one time a separate mass of land, and upon it lived very peculiar animals, such as the great sloths and armadilloes, and strange birds.

In the Holarctic region we find, either still living or buried in recent strata, the great hairy mammals, elephants and cattle, antelopes, deer, camels, horses, rhinoceroses, tapirs, pigs, hippopotami, tigers and lions, and such forms. When we dig down only to the depth of a few feet, in river gravels and comparatively modern deposits, we find all the big creatures in this region as shown by their fossilized bones. But, owing to some change of climate and other con-

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

ditions not very clear, most of them left this region and migrated to the southern projecting regions.

One of the most curious results of this emigration is that at the present day the tapir is found alive in the island of Sumatra and that it is found alive also in Central America. At one time naturalists were much surprised to find a tapir in the new world like the tapir in the old world, and nowhere else but in these limited spots, remote from each other. But now we know that tapirs existed all over the Holarctic region, for we find there their fossil remains; we recognize them by the shape of their teeth and bones which we dig up. Even in England, in Suffolk, we find the tapir in the deposit known as the Red Crag, and again in different parts of Germany, France and Greece, and even in China and in North America, tapirs are found buried in the sands of Pliocene and Miocene age. The present race of tapirs existing in the East Indies and in Central America are as it were the outlying survivors of those which existed formerly all over the great Holarctic region.

Such facts as these about the tapir indicate the importance of knowing where particular

## HOW TO RECOGNIZE BONES

fossil animals are found; for thus we are enabled to come to some conclusion as to the former connexion of different land surfaces of the world with one another.

The question must have occurred to many of you,—How do we recognize fragments of bones found in the earth? How do I know that a fragment I may find is the lower jaw of a creature like the horse? or that bones I may dig up are the bones of a tapir? How do I know that a given skull is that of a reptile? and that a given shell was inhabited by a creature like the nautilus?

We are able to know these and like matters because the shape of different parts of each kind of animal is very constant. The kinds which are like one another in other respects are like one another in the details of their bones and teeth, even in such minute points as the microscopic texture of the bones. An immense mass of facts about such things is known, and when set out in orderly fashion is termed the science of comparative anatomy or animal morphography.

The first photograph I have to show in this chapter is of a piece of bone which was sent

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

fifty years ago to Professor Owen by a gentleman in New Zealand who had lately arrived there, and who had found it in his garden. Professor Owen, on examination, was able to say from the general make and structure of the bone that it was the bone of a bird. It was about seven or eight inches long (Fig. 43). On examining the ridges and various

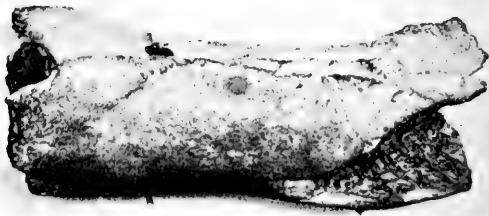


FIG. 43.—Photograph of the original piece (seven inches long) of a thigh bone of a gigantic bird, from the examination of which Sir Richard Owen inferred the former existence of a gigantic flightless bird in New Zealand. The specimen is preserved in the Natural History Museum. (Original.)

marks on the bones, Owen was able, from his knowledge of the character of bones, to say that it was identical with the middle part—the ends were broken off—of the thigh bone of an



FIG. 44.—Photograph of Sir Richard Owen standing beside the restored skeleton of the New Zealand Moa (*Dinornis maximus*). From a memoir by Owen.

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

ostrich. He ventured then to publish that this bone was a proof that there existed formerly in New Zealand a huge terrestrial bird like the ostrich, only bigger. After a few years, more bones were sent to Owen from New Zealand, which entirely confirmed what he had said : and in the course of a few years he was able to put together from the bones sent a skeleton with enormous legs and neck, the skeleton of the ostrich-like bird the Moa of New Zealand. In Fig. 44 you see Professor Owen himself at the side of the restored skeleton. Since that time a great number of these birds have been found buried in the morasses and comparatively recent deposits of New Zealand, showing that many of them existed alive some five or six hundred years ago, and that they were then probably hunted out of existence by the ancestors of the present Maoris. I shall have a few more words to say about the giant birds of New Zealand in a later chapter.

In Fig. 45 we have the photograph of a very fine preparation in the Natural History Museum, showing the skeleton of a man and a horse side by side. The main object of this comparison is to show that, though so different in

## MAN AND HORSE



45.—Photograph of the skeletons of Man and Horse from a group, prepared under the direction of Sir William Flower for the Natural History Museum.

*Sh.* Shoulder-bone. *W.* Wrist-bones (so-called knee of horse's fore-leg). *E.* Elbow process (olecranon). *K.* Knee joint (Stifle of horse). *P.* Hip-bones. *T.* Tail-bones. *H.* Heel-bone (calcaneum of man), the hock of the horse.

general bearing and form, all the bones of a man correspond in detail with those of the horse. The thigh bone of the horse and the thigh bone of the man, the knee (called the "stifle") of the

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

horse and the knee of the man, correspond. The man has a short foot, the horse a long one. The upstanding bit at the back of the horse's leg called the "hock" is really the heel, and corresponds to the heel bone which you can distinguish in the man's skeleton. So also the fore-arm and shoulder-blade correspond in the two skeletons.

Accordingly, as animals are alike or unlike in the details of their structure, so we can group them into divisions and sub-divisions (see the list of classes at the end of Chapter I). There are certain marks by which it is easy to recognize fragments of bone, dug it may be out of a quarry or railway cutting, and to know at once the division or kind of animals to which the owner of the fragments belonged. I have already alluded to the fact that the strata of the earth are revealed to us by cliffs on the sea-shore, by exposed rocks and by river banks; and I would add by such activities of man as the digging of quarries and railway cuttings. Suppose that you find a skull in such a digging—there are marks by which you can tell whether it belongs to a mammal or reptile.



## THE OCCIPITAL CONDYLES

In Fig. 46 I have photographed the whole back part of a skull which contained the brain, and you see where the spinal cord entered the skull to join the brain. In this creature (an ox) there are two bony surfaces (marked *Ex, Ex*)

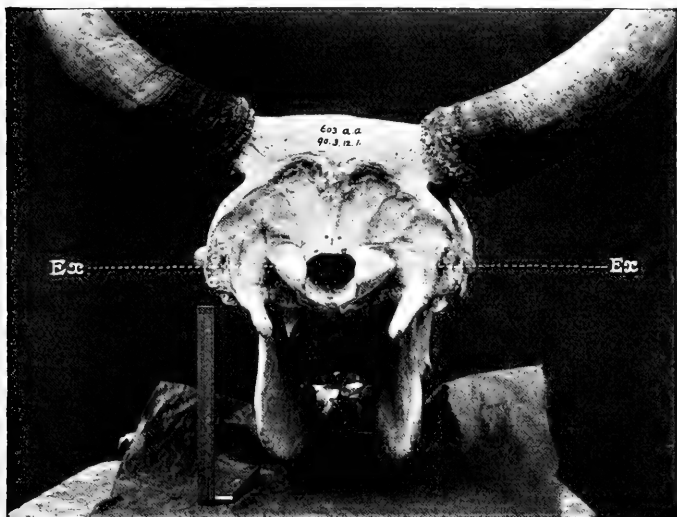


FIG. 46.—Photograph of the back of a skull of an Ox, to show the two occipital condyles, *Ex, Ex*.

forming the joints or condyles of the skull by which the first neck-bone or vertebra was fastened to it whilst allowing a rotating movement. All mammals' skulls are provided with this *pair* of knobs or "condyles." But in the crocodile's skull (Fig. 47) you will see below

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

the aperture for the spinal cord *only one* large condyle (marked *Bas*). From such a fragment of the skull then you can at once tell whether to place the creature to which it belonged among the hairy warm-blooded quadrupeds called mammals, or with the reptiles. A bird

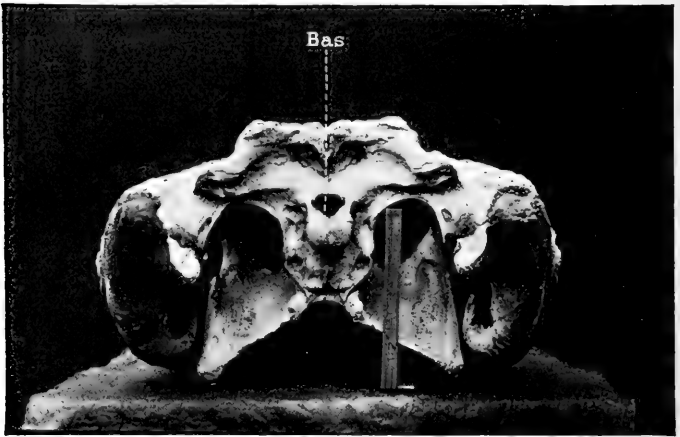


FIG. 47.—Photograph of the back of a Crocodile's skull to show the single occipital condyle *Bas*, lying below the hole or foramen by which the spinal cord enters the skull to join the brain.

is like a reptile in having a single joint or knob at the back of the skull.

As an example of the definite marks by which bones can be referred to their proper classes, the following is a curious point. Fig. 48 is a drawing of the internal ear of man—the soft

## THE SNAIL-LIKE COCHLEA

part of the ear inside, embedded in bone. It consists of three loop-like canals and a snail-like coil. All hairy mammals have that snail-like construction of the internal ear. In Fig. 49 is photographed the ear-bone of a mammal's skull cut through, and you can see the place for the snail-like soft ear—the cochlea or internal spiral of the ear, as it is called.

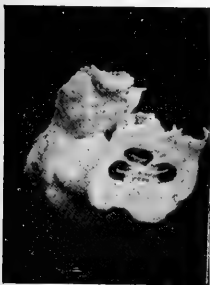


FIG. 49.— Photograph from a section through the bone in which the soft internal ear is lodged, showing the coils of the snail-shaped space in which the spiral cochlea lies.



FIG. 48.—Drawing of the auditory organ or internal ear of man. **A** the coiled tube known as the helix or cochlea. **B** the three tubular arches or semi-circular canals.

No other animals except the mammals are known to possess a spiral internal ear, and all known mammals do possess it. If, therefore, you discovered a fragment of bone showing this spiral-like space you would know that the bit of bone must in all probability belong to a mammal.

At the beginning of the nineteenth century a portion of a great elongated skull was brought from America

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

to Europe, dug out of the sands of Florida. It was thought to belong to a reptile like the crocodile, and was called *Basilosaurus*. But the naturalist in whose care it was, on showing the specimen to a friend (Herman von Meyer) dropped it on the stone floor of his museum and cracked the back of the skull. The crack exposed the spiral cavity or cochlea of the ear, and thus it was shown that the specimen was the skull of a mammal. Sure enough, it turned out later to be the skull of a kind of whale (*Zeuglodon*).

Teeth are of great help and importance in determining the sort of animal to which a fragment belongs.

Fig. 50 is a photograph from a specimen prepared in the Natural History Museum. The wild boar or pig occupies in regard to teeth a sort of central position among mammals (hairy warm-blooded quadrupeds). Its teeth are such that to them you can refer, as to a standard pattern, the teeth of all other mammals. There are three middle teeth in front in the upper and lower jaw, chisel-like teeth, the incisors. Beyond these are the great canine teeth: then the cheek teeth follow. These are seven in

## TEETH OF THE PIG

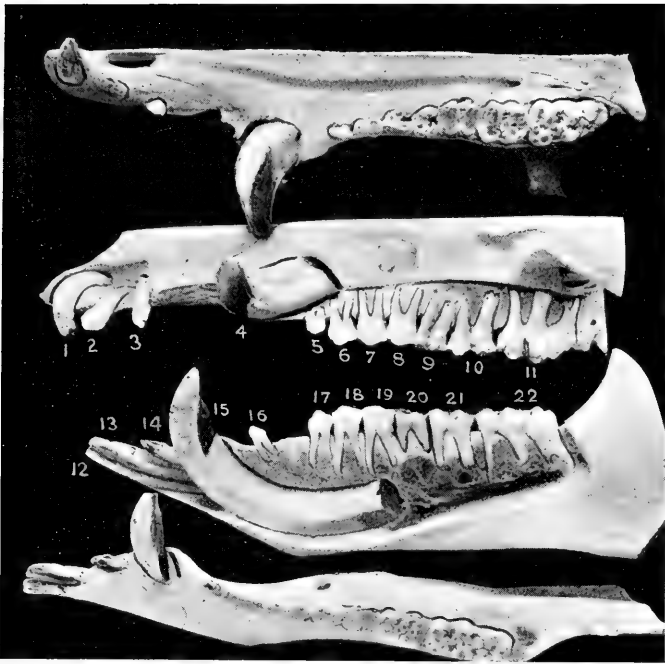


FIG. 50.—Photograph from preparations of the upper and lower jaw of a Pig, to show the teeth in position. The bone has been cut away so as to show the roots or fangs of the teeth. (1, 2, 3) the three upper incisor teeth of the left side ; (4) the upper canine tooth of the left side ; (5, 6, 7, 8) the four front molars or cheek teeth, called the premolars, of the left side of the upper jaw ; (9, 10, 11) the three back molars (not preceded by "first" teeth) of the left side of the upper jaw ; (12, 13, 14) the three lower incisor teeth of the left side ; (15) the canine of the lower jaw, left side : note its enormous root ; (16, 17, 18, 19) the four front molars (premolars) of the left side of the lower jaw ; (20, 21, 22) the three back molars (not preceded by "first" teeth) of the left side of the lower jaw.

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

number, four in front which are replaced—that means that second teeth come to take the place of the first—and three hinder ones, which are never replaced. If you look at the surface of these cheek teeth you will find they are broad, with many tubercles, fitted for grinding great varieties of food. There are seven of these cheek teeth on each side in each jaw, upper and lower, one canine, and three incisors, so that eleven on each side in upper and in lower jaw or forty-four teeth in all is the complete number, the typical number—the most characteristic number in the group of hairy mammals. Many have less, but among the immediate ancestors of those mammals with “reduced dentition” we find a larger number of teeth, and in their remote ancestors the complete typical number is discovered.

It is important to notice that whereas the front teeth have a single fang by which they are implanted in the jaw the cheek teeth have two fangs, as shown in Fig. 51. Teeth with two fangs appear to be peculiar to mammals. Other animals have only single fangs to all their teeth, as mammals have for their incisors and canines (as a rule).

## TEETH

The human teeth (Fig. 52) are reduced in number. There are only two incisors above and below on each side ; then the small canine

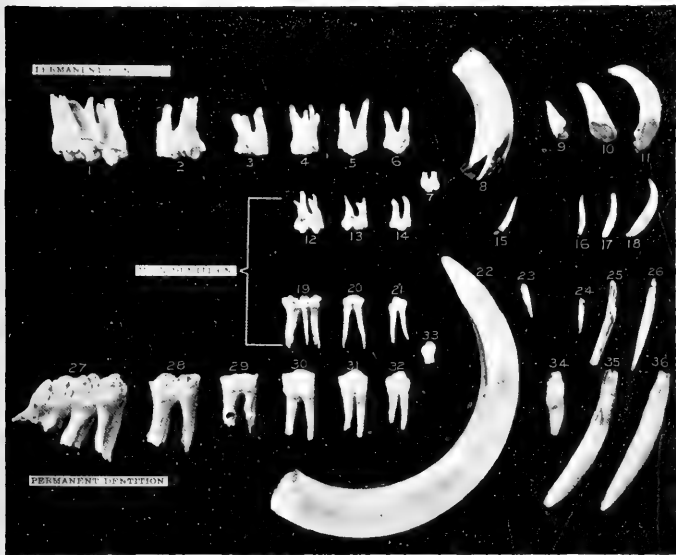


FIG. 51.—Photograph of a preparation of the teeth of the upper and lower jaw of a Pig. The small teeth between the upper and lower row of large teeth are the milk teeth or “first” teeth which are shed. Note how small the predecessors (15 and 23) of the great tusks are, and also that the foremost molar (7 and 33) in both upper and lower jaw has no successor or predecessor, as is also true of the three back molars.

or dog-teeth, one on each side ; then five cheek teeth or “molars,” two smaller and three bigger. From a single tooth we could tell whether a piece of jaw-bone belonged to a man

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

or not. Though like a monkey's, a man's tooth can be distinguished from it and from all other

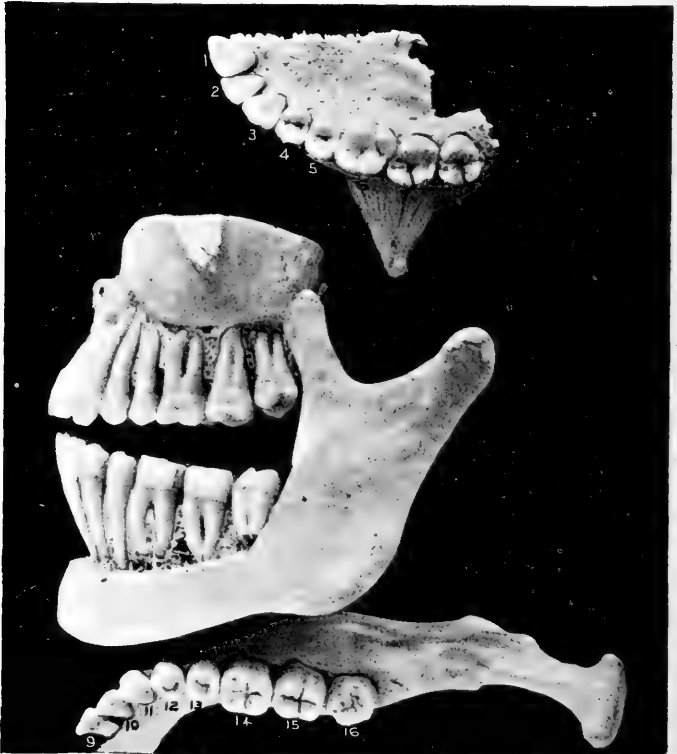


FIG. 52.—Photograph of a preparation (in the Natural History Museum) of the upper and lower jaw-bone of man, the bone cut away so as to show the fangs of the teeth. The pattern of the crowns of the molars is well seen in the upper and lower figures.

teeth. In the next figures we have photographs showing certain modifications in the teeth of



## TEETH OF TIGERS AND OF RATS

mammals. You see in the Clouded Tiger (Fig. 53) that the teeth are few in number, and are sharp, for cutting or tearing flesh, whilst the canine teeth are very large.

In Fig. 54 the skull of a great rat, as big as a beaver or fair-sized dog, is photographed. The

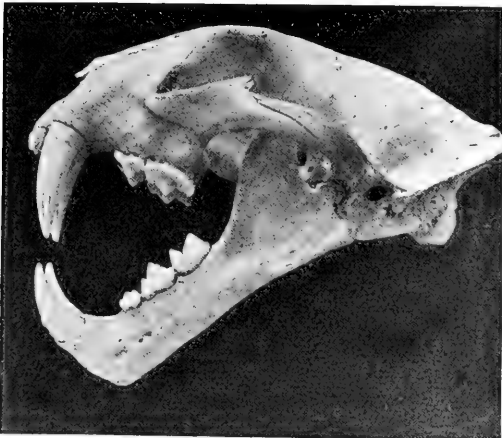


FIG. 53.—Skull of the Clouded Tiger, to show the large canine teeth and the few but pointed and cutting molars, two above and three below.

front teeth (only one on each side above and below) are chisel-like, and very large, to enable the rat to gnaw wood.

In reptiles you no longer get complex cheek teeth. All the teeth are peg-like. They have

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

no grinding teeth with big surfaces, and all the teeth have a single fang (Figs. 55 and 56).



FIG. 54.—Photograph of the skull of the Coypu Rat, to show the greatly enlarged incisor teeth or “rodent” chisel-like teeth in front, the absence of canines, and the flat grinding molars behind. The large gap in the row of teeth between the incisors and the molars is very characteristic.

The fossil jaw shown in Fig. 57 came from

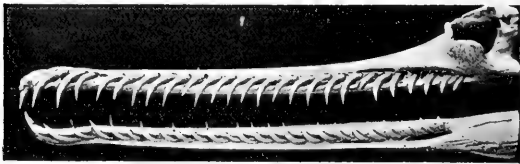


FIG. 55.—Jaws of the Gharial, an Indian Crocodile, to show the peg-like teeth. The bone is removed, showing that the teeth have only a single fang each.

Stonesfield in Oxfordshire. It is embedded in

## A FOSSIL JAW FROM STONESFIELD

hard Jurassic slate, and is one of the most ancient evidences of the existence of a mammal. The sight of its double fangs at once rendered it almost certain that the teeth must be those of a mammal: the whole shape of the jaw is

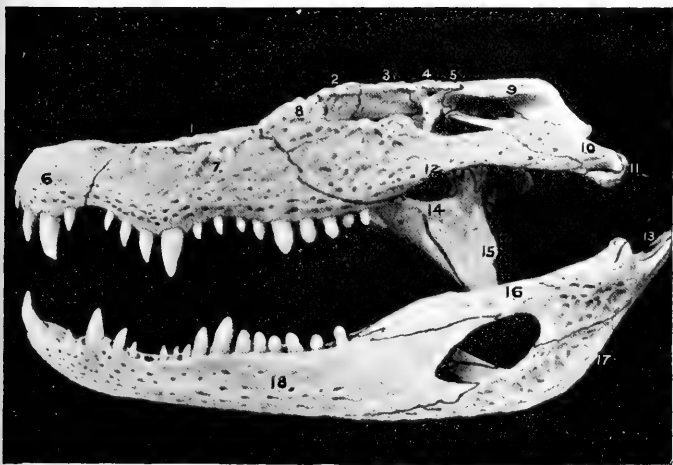


FIG. 56.—Photograph of the skull and lower jaw of a true Crocodile. The numerous peg-like teeth of different sizes, firmly implanted in the jaw-bones, are shown.

like that of a small mammal, such as the hedgehog.

We must now take up again the general story of extinct animals; and to do so we will first of all go back, so to speak, a little way into the strata deposited on the earth's surface—just far



FIG. 57.—Enlarged representation of the lower jaw of a small mammal (*Amphitherium prevostii*) from the Stonesfield slate of Jurassic (Oolite) age near Oxford. The figure shows the double fangs of several of the cheek teeth exposed by the breaking away of the jaw-bone. The jaw is actually only one inch in length.

## PREHISTORIC REMAINS OF MAN

enough to take us beyond the range of written history or record, which barely reaches further than four thousand years.

Recent explorations in ancient cities, Egypt and other parts of the East have brought out from layer after layer of rubbish and mud the different remains of man, different instruments, utensils and works of art. As one gets deeper one finds remains showing different habits and ways of life. But all are practically within the historic period. Beyond that we come to a period of which there is no tradition or written record, but of which we have evidence only by the remains we find; flint instruments, carvings, and even occasionally some human bones. The most important of the prehistoric remains of man take us back, to judge from the position in which they are found, some 150,000 years. These are the remains, found in river gravels in England and France and other countries, proving that man lived here in a savage state with the Mammoth, the Rhinoceros, Hyena, Cave Lion and Cave Bear.

Fig. 58 shows two flint implements which these men manufactured and used. A flint instru-

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

ment of this kind was found more than a hundred years ago in the gravel in Gray's Inn Lane, in



FIG. 58.—Photographs of two flint implements of the Palæolithic age, obtained from the gravel-pit at St. Acheuil near Amiens, by the author, in 1870.

London, and was figured and described; but its great antiquity was not recognized at that time.

In the middle of the last century, attention

## PREHISTORIC MAN

was drawn to these flint instruments found in the gravel of the river Somme by a French antiquarian, M. Boucher de Perthes. He got immense quantities of these worked flints from the neighbourhood of Abbeville and Amiens, and he maintained they were the work of men. They were clearly, from the depth of gravel under which they were found, of enormous antiquity. The matter was gone into carefully at the time; geologists and naturalists took keen interest in it, and the great antiquity of man in Europe was established. And besides these implements in the gravel others have been found in caves associated, as in the gravel, with the remains of animals which have long ceased to exist in this part of the world. These are such mammals as the reindeer, the hairy rhinoceros, the great Irish stag, the cave bear, the cave hyena and the lion. Huge wild cattle, such as the Aurochs or Urus of Caesar, and the Bison, existed then in quantity. In some places the actual bones and skulls of these primitive men have been found with the bones of extinct animals.

The skulls of primitive men and of modern men show a certain difference in shape. If we

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

take two skulls, that of a man and a monkey (Fig. 59), and draw a line from the region just over the nose, between the ridges of the brow, and run it back to the occipital ridge at the back of the skull, there is left above the line a

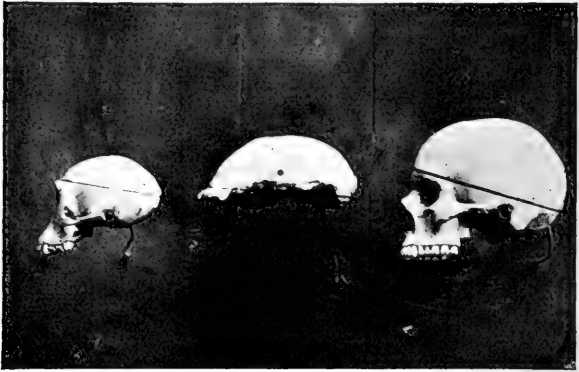


FIG. 59.—Photograph of the top of the skull or “calvaria” of the so-called Monkey-man, *Pithecanthropus*, discovered in Java. On the left is the skull of a Chimpanzee and on the right that of a modern man, for comparison. A line is drawn from the point between the eyebrows to the occipital ridge at the back of the skull, showing how much shallower the dome of the skull (the part above the line) is in the ape than in the man, and that the Javanese skull is nearly as shallow as that of the ape. (Original.)

great hemispherical dome in the human skull, whereas in the monkey the space left above is much flatter, much shallower.

In a river gravel in Java the imperfect skull of the so-called *Pithecanthropus*, or monkey-



## HUMAN SKULLS

man, was lately discovered. It is really, in its main features, a human skull. A photograph of it is seen in Fig. 59—the middle one

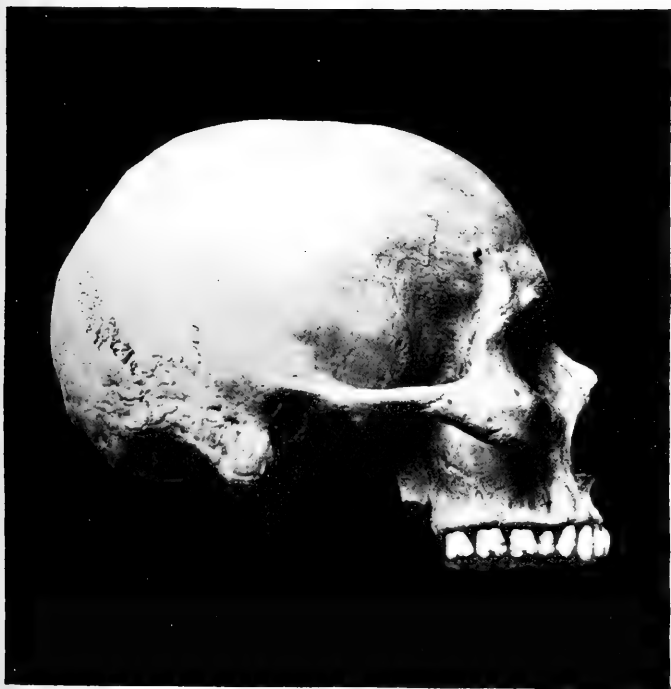


FIG. 59A.—Photograph of a human skull of modern European race.

of the three figures. It has a shallow upper region, much like that of a monkey. Other shallow skulls of primitive men have been found in caverns, such as those of Spy in Belgium and

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

in the sand of the Neanderthal on the Rhine. It seems certain that primitive man had a shallower brain than the more recent man. But some of the prehistoric men seem to have been able to draw, and to have exhibited great skill in that art. It is difficult to say whether there was more than one race present at this time, and whether the men of the shallow skulls were the same men who made the drawings. In one of the caves of France inhabited by prehistoric men, and thickly strewn with their chipped flints and with the bones of extinct animals eaten by the men, a piece of a mammoth's tusk has been found with a mammoth carved upon it (Fig. 60) evidently by the men who lived there. We also find the heads of reindeer, carved upon pieces of bone. The photographs reproduced in Figs. 60 and 61 are from drawings of the actual specimens. In Fig. 61 is shown a piece of an antler upon which a reindeer is cleverly outlined. The tuft of hair below the chin is shown, and the great feet and the extra toes are correctly pictured. Clearly the men who drew this reindeer lived with the reindeer. And besides the reindeer, living with those men in the South of France was the great mammoth.

## THE MAMMOTH

The mammoth was like an Indian elephant, but with a coarse hairy pelt and its tusks had a slightly different curvature from that seen in the

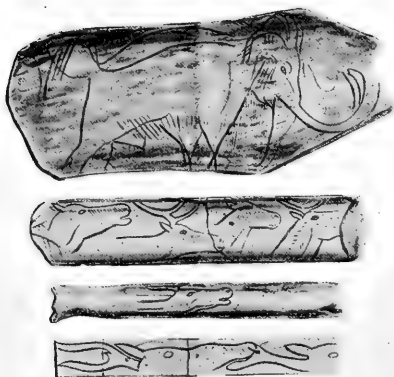


FIG. 60.—Engravings on ivory and bone made by ancient men, who lived in caves in the South of France at the time when the mammoth, reindeer, bear and hyæna inhabited Europe. The uppermost figure is that of a mammoth, the others represent reindeer.

Indian elephant. It was a little bigger than the biggest Indian elephant.

The mammoth has left its remains all over the Holarctic region. Even in our own country

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

we are continually coming across tusks and teeth. In the Natural History Museum there is a whole skull, with enormous tusks, which was dug up in a brick-field at Ilford in East London about twenty-five years ago. From this brick-

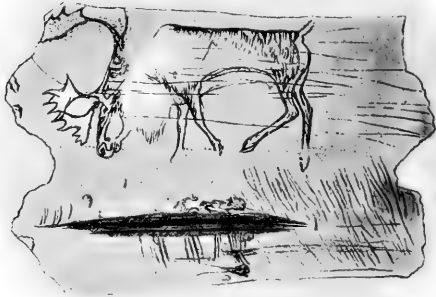


FIG. 61.—Engraving on a piece of an antler found in a cave in Switzerland. It represents very accurately a Reindeer.

field I used to get many remains of mammoth, rhinoceros and hippopotamus when I was a boy. When this mammoth's skull was found by the workmen, the authorities of the British Museum of that day sent down a man to remove the specimen with the greatest care, and it is now at the Natural History Museum.

## THE MAMMOTH

The remains of the mammoth are found in



FIG. 62.—The skeleton of the Mammoth found frozen in Siberia and now in the museum of St. Petersburg. A good deal of the flesh and skin is preserved in a dried state on the head, whilst the feet are still encased in the great leathery pads which hide the separate toes.

enormous abundance throughout the Holarctic region. It is probable that this huge beast

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

existed later in Asia and Siberia than in our part of the world. In the north of Siberia complete carcasses of the mammoth and also of the hairy rhinoceroses are found in a frozen condition, with the skin, hair, trunk and soft parts complete.



FIG. 63.—Skeleton of a male of the giant Irish deer (*Cervus giganteus*) dug up from peat in Ireland.

At the beginning of the last century one of these frozen carcasses was removed to the Museum at St. Petersburg. It is from this specimen, drawn in Fig. 62, that we know that the mammoth had a hairy skin.

## THE GIANT IRISH DEER

It is an interesting fact that the newborn young, both of the Indian and the African elephant have a complete coat of fairly long hair, which disappears in a few weeks. So the mammoth is not really peculiar in this matter.

In Fig. 63 is shown the skeleton of the largest and most beautiful of all the deer tribe; it is now extinct, but existed later in Ireland than anywhere else, and in great numbers. The bones are found in the moss and bogs of Ireland.

It was co-existent with primitive man, and perhaps survived in Ireland till nearly historic times. Why it died out there is a difficult thing to explain.

As our explorations into the river gravels of only twenty or thirty feet depth have brought us into contact with the mammoth, I propose now to say something more about recent and extinct elephants, and to take a glance at the past history of the elephant tribe.

Fig. 64 gives a careful restoration of the hairy mammoth as it must have appeared in life, and in Fig. 65 we have a photograph from life of the Indian elephant. In the Indian elephant you should note the comparatively small ear and the high forehead.

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

Fig. 66 is a photograph from life of the African elephant. It has a longer head and much



FIG. 64.—An imaginary picture of the Mammoth (*Elephas primigenius*) as it appeared in life. Note the hairy coat, and the curiously curved tusks, the points of which are turned towards each other, not outward, as in many

larger ear than the Indian species.

The biggest Indian elephant is very rarely



# THE INDIAN ELEPHANT



FIG. 65.—Photograph from life of the Indian Elephant (*Elephas maximus*), incompletely grown.

## EXTINCT ANIMALS



FIG. 66.—Photograph of a young specimen of the African Elephant  
(*Elephas africanus*) from life.

## TUSKS OF ELEPHANTS

as much as eleven feet high at the shoulders. But some specimens of the African elephant must grow to twelve and possibly thirteen feet

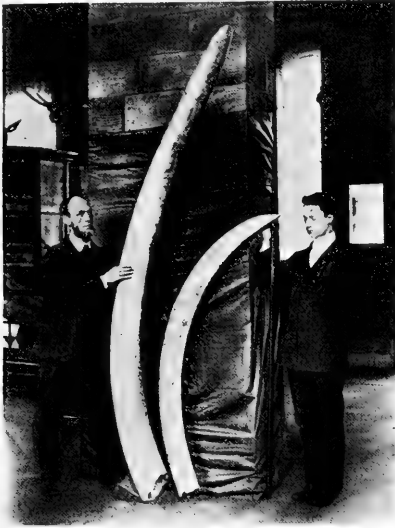


FIG. 67.—Two tusks of Elephants photographed from specimens in the Natural History Museum. The smaller is a fine tusk of the Indian elephant, weighing 70 lb. The larger is the biggest tusk of a recent elephant on record. It weighs 228 lb. and is ten feet two inches in length, measured along the outer curvature. It is one of a pair belonging to an African elephant, and was brought to Zanzibar from the interior about ten years ago.

in height, if we may judge by the size of their tusks.

Fig. 67 shows two elephants' tusks: the two specimens are in the Natural History Museum.

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

One is a very fine Indian elephant's tusk, weighing seventy-two pounds—as big an Indian elephant's tusk as is to be found in any museum. The other is an African elephant's tusk; it is

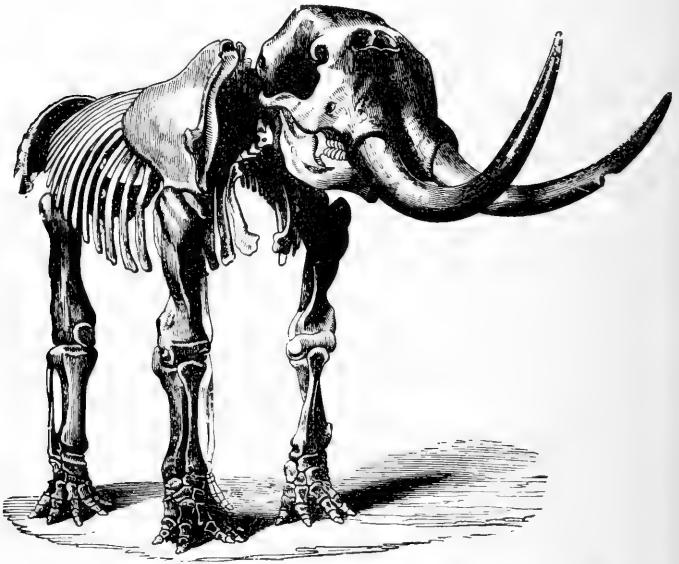


FIG. 68.—Skeleton of the American Mastodon (*Mastodon americanus*).

ten feet two inches in length, and weighs 228 pounds. It is the biggest tusk ever seen in the ivory market, and was purchased for the Museum in 1900. Elephants' tusks have for many years been imported from Africa, and never has one

## TUSKS OF ELEPHANTS

been seen to approach this in size. Anything near 150 pounds in weight is considered enormous; and this weighs 228 pounds. It was brought from Zanzibar ten years ago, and is one

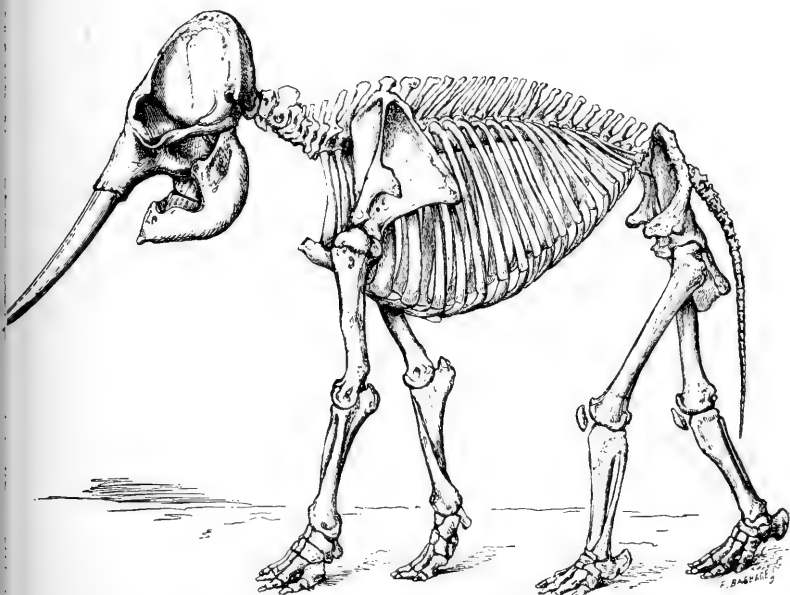


FIG. 69.—Skeleton of Indian Elephant (*Elephas maximus*).

of a pair which probably formed part of the treasure collected by Emin Pasha.

In Fig. 68 we have represented the skeleton of a creature very similar to the true Elephant, but that it has slightly different teeth and a more “snouty” or elongated head and jaw. It

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

is the American mastodon. The skeleton should be compared with that of the mammoth given in Fig. 62, and with that of the Indian elephant shown in Fig. 69.

In the United States (Ohio and other localities) very complete remains of this enormous creature have been found in bogs and morasses which are probably not more ancient than the peat bogs of Ireland in which the great Irish stag is found. Man was certainly contemporary with some of the American species of mastodon. But in Europe no mastodons survived to so late a period. Other and older species of mastodon seem to have preceded the elephants in Europe, Africa and Asia, and in fact to have been the ancestors from which elephants were derived.

## CHAPTER III

THE ANCESTRAL HISTORY OF ELEPHANTS—  
EXTINCT HORSES AND RHINOCEROSES—  
THE ARSINOITHERIUM.

**W**HEN we compare the American mastodon with true elephants, viz., the African, the Indian, and the Holarctic one called the mammoth, we find in the first place that though the mastodon is as big a beast as any of these, and very close to them in the form and arrangement of its bones, yet there are two important differences to be observed. These relate first to the shape of the head, and secondly to the shape and number of the teeth. If you look at an elephant's skull (Fig. 70) and compare it with that of a dog (Fig. 71) or pig, you will be struck by the abrupt way in which the bones of the face are set. The face is almost straight so far as the bony parts are concerned—both the upper and lower jaw are quite short. There is, in fact, no "snout" indicated in the bony

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

skull. This extreme shortening or pushing in (as it were) of the face is similar to what occurs in bulldogs and pugs as compared with ordinary long-snouted dogs, as is shown in Fig. 71, only in the elephant it is carried further than in any



FIG. 70.—Skull of an adult Indian Elephant. The skull is placed in position, so that the grinding surface of the molar teeth is horizontal.

dog. We may call this shortening of the face “bull-dogging.” This “bull-dogging” of the skull occurs in a South American race of cattle called the Neatta breed. It seems that the ancestral elephants must have had a long face



## BULL-DOG SKULLS

and bony snout like other animals, but that their descendants have gradually become "bull-



FIG. 71.—Photographs of skulls of a Bull-dog on the left, and of a greyhound on the right, to show the shortening of the bones of the face in the first. The lower figures show the same skulls in section, so as to display the brain cavity.

dogged.” The mastodon’s skull (Fig. 72) shows far more of a projecting bony face or snout

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

than does that of the elephant, and this would lead us to suppose that the mastodons are more primitive, that is to say, more like the ancient ancestors of elephants, than are the true elephants. An interesting fact in this connexion is that the young new-born elephant has a more



FIG. 72.—Photograph of the skull of the American Mastodon (*Mastodon americanus*), from the specimen in the Natural History Museum.

“snouty” skull than the grown-up elephant, as is shown by Figs. 73, 74 and 75. It is often the case that very young animals show features in which they resemble their ancestors, which disappear as the young creatures grow to full size.

## NEW-BORN ELEPHANT'S SKULL

It is not only in having a more elongated face that the American mastodon is of a more primitive build than the true elephants. Its teeth also are less peculiar than those of true elephants and more like in number and shape

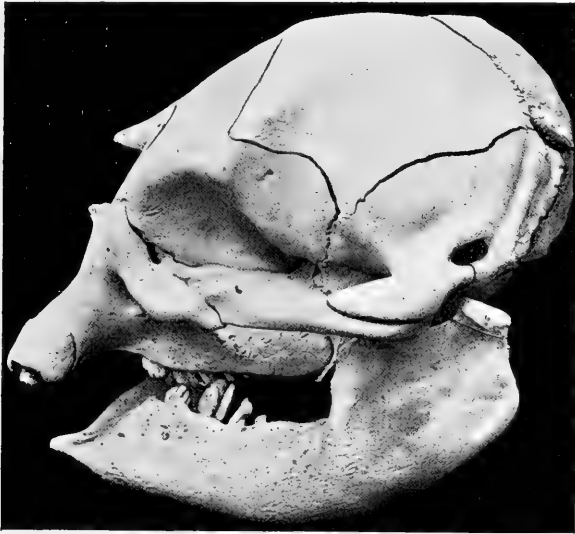


FIG. 73.—Skull of a new-born Indian Elephant, photographed from a specimen in the Natural History Museum.

to those of the ordinary, more central kinds of mammals, such as the pig (see Fig. 50 in the last lecture). The elephant has two enormous incisor teeth in the upper jaw, in front—the tusks. There are no corre-

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

sponding teeth in the lower jaw. Then there is a gap in the series, and we come to the cheek teeth, which are very strange. The jaws, both upper and lower, are so short, and the teeth



FIG. 74.—Section of the skull of a young Indian Elephant, to compare with the section of a half-grown elephant's skull given in Fig. 75, in which the face has become relatively shortened and upright. Note in this and in Fig. 75 the curious conical nasal bone, which is like a small bony horn.

are so big, that there is only room for one tooth or a tooth and a half on each side above and below at one time. An elephant only ever has

## ELEPHANT'S TEETH

three full-sized cheek-teeth on each side above and below (twelve in all), and these push from behind forwards—the first getting worn out and pushed forwards as the second comes forwards, and this again wearing out and dis-



FIG. 75.—Section of a half-grown Indian Elephant's skull, with the first and second molar teeth in position (therefore more than twenty and less than twenty-five years old).

appearing as the third pushes itself into place from the back of the jaw. Three little "milk teeth" or first-teeth of the molar series precede these on each side above and below, and are lost one after the other—between the second

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

and fifteenth years of life. The first big molar comes into place in the fifteenth year, and lasts for ten years, when its place is taken by the second, which is already showing its crown in



FIG. 76.—Lower jaw of an Indian Elephant, showing two molars on each side, the front ones wearing away as the back ones come up into position. The transverse ridges on the teeth are well seen.

the twentieth year. The third comes forward in the same way about twenty years later.

The molar teeth of the Indian elephant and of the mammoth have a great number of narrow transverse ridges set across the crown of the

## RIDGES ON ELEPHANT'S TEETH

tooth. As many as twenty-seven of these ridges are seen on the biggest molar tooth when it is in place, and the whole surface is worn by grinding. In Fig. 76 the ridges on the teeth are shown, but not to the full number, as the front tooth is reduced in size by wear, and the hinder one has not yet got all its crown into

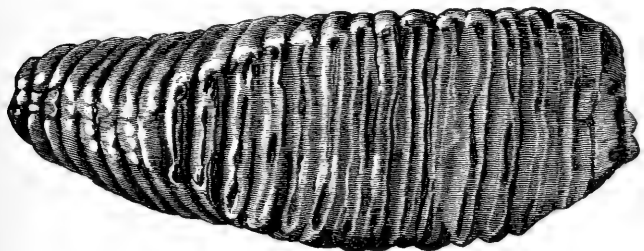


FIG. 76A.—The last molar of the lower jaw of a Mammoth, in order to show the great number of transverse ridges or segments of the tooth (as many as twenty-two in this specimen), a feature in which the Indian elephant and the mammoth are closely similar.

play. In Fig. 77 is shown a photograph of the lower jaw of an African elephant. Only one big molar tooth on each side is in position, and it has eleven transverse ridges. This is the most the African elephant ever has. It will be seen, by comparing the figures, that the ridges of the African elephant are much wider than those of the Indian. The corresponding tooth of the

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

Indian elephant, owing to the narrower shape of the ridges, would have twenty-seven of them in view when fully "cut." Now there is no doubt that the increase in the number of the ridges and their narrow form is a late and special



FIG. 77.—Lower jaw of an adult African Elephant, showing molars with only eleven transverse ridges, or "lozenges."

character of the elephants. Their cheek-teeth would be more like those of pigs, tapirs and bears, if they had fewer transverse ridges. Accordingly, in correspondence with the view that the mastodons are more primitive in their



## RIDGES OF MASTODON'S TEETH

characters than the true elephants, we find that *their* cheek-teeth have very few transverse ridges—from two to five (fig. 78)—and that the jaw is relatively longer, so that there is room,



FIG. 78.—Lower jaw of the American Mastodon, with two molars on each side, completely cut, showing respectively three and four transverse ridges only. Note also the elongated form of the jaw.

not only for two complete crowns of molars to be in position on each side at the same time, but even for three. Thus we approach nearer to the central or “typical” condition of the mammals’ teeth which, as we have seen in the pig (fig. 50)

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

shows seven cheek-teeth in position on each side in each jaw at once—of which the front ones are second-teeth and were preceded by milk-teeth—whilst the three big back ones are not preceded. In tracing the ancestry of living mammals through extinct ancestors of different succeeding geological ages, we expect to find even the strangest and most curiously modified creatures, such as are the elephants in regard to their teeth and jaws and the horses in regard to their toes—preceded by forms which bring us nearer and nearer, as we recede into the past, to a sort of common form or “type” of the mammalian group—a hairy-coated creature, with five toes on each foot, the typical dentition or tooth series of three incisors, one canine, four front or fore-molars, and three back molars on each side of each jaw, with three or four tubercles or knobs on the crowns of the molar teeth. And we do not expect this remote ancestor to be very big—not much bigger than a dog—since great size is a peculiarity implying long and special predominance.

A further point in which the American mastodon is more like the ordinary run of mammals than are the elephants, is that it has front teeth

## THE LONG-JAWED MASTODON

—a single pair—in its lower jaw when it is quite young. These drop out in the American mastodons, but we have here a photograph (Fig. 79) of the skeleton of a much older mastodon, the remains of which were dug up in strata of the Middle Miocene (not only below Pleistocene, but



FIG. 78A.—Molar teeth of *Mastodon arvernensis*, photographed from specimens found in the Red Crag of Suffolk. These molars have five transverse ridges : that on the left shows the bony fangs beneath the crown of the tooth.

below Pliocene and below Upper Miocene) in France. This skeleton is preserved in the Museum of Paris, where the photograph was taken. You will see that its head differs in many ways from that of elephants and the late American mastodon. It has an extraordinarily long lower

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

jaw, with two tusks in it. A drawing of the side view of the skull is shown in Fig. 80, and you

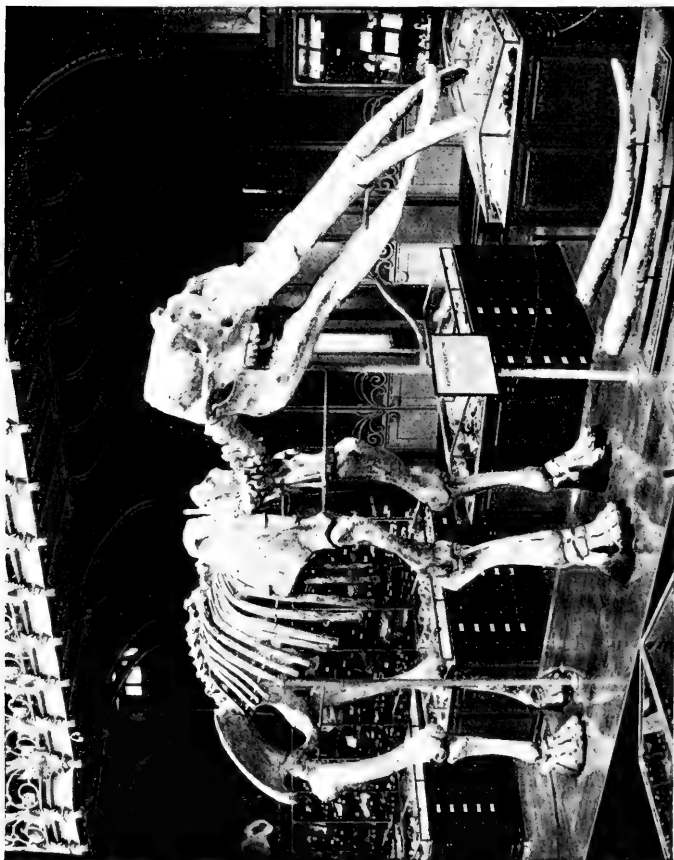


FIG. 79.—Photograph of the complete skeleton of *Mastodon (Tetralodon) angustidens*, from the Miocene strata of the South of France; taken from the specimen as it now stands in the Museum of the Jardin des Plantes in Paris.

can see how the two horizontal lower teeth must have played between the two curious downwardly-bent tusks of the upper jaw.

## THE LONG-JAWED MASTODON

By way of parenthesis I must here mention a mastodon-like creature of the same age—which had no tusks in the upper jaw, but two huge tusks in the lower jaw, which is bent downward. This is the *Dinotherium*, found in the Miocene in Germany and other localities. It seems to have left no modern representatives,



FIG. 80.—Restored representation of the skull and lower jaw of *Mastodon* (*Tetrabelodon*) *angustidens* from a drawing prepared by Dr. Henry Woodward, F.R.S.

and is a sort of extinct side-branch of the elephant family. The big tusks of the lower jaw were probably used for raking up roots in the mud of rivers and lakes.

The Miocene mastodon, with the long lower jaw, is known as *Tetrabelodon angustidens*. The examination of its skeleton some years ago led me to the conclusion (as, indeed, was inevitable)

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

that it could not have had a depending trunk like an elephant has and such as the short-jawed mastodons certainly must have had. Its “trunk” must have rested horizontally on the



FIG. 81.—The skull of *Dinotherium giganteum*, Kaup, from the Miocene of Eppelsheim, near Worms, on the Rhine.

long lower jaw between the upper tusks—and was in fact not a “trunk” at all, but an elongated upper lip (Fig. 82)—representing the middle part of the upper jaw in a soft, flexible

## THE LONG-JAWED MASTODON

condition. It seemed to me probable that the elephant's trunk had originated in this way:



FIG. 82.—Drawing representing the probable appearance in life of the *Tetralodon angustidens*. (Original.)

namely by the great elongation, in the first place, of the lower jaw and upper lip and jaw,

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

and by the subsequent shrinking of the lower jaw and bull-dogging of the bones of the face. Thus the elongated mid-part of the face—no longer supported by a long lower jaw—would gradually drop as the lower jaw grew shorter and shorter in successive ages, and at last it would hang down as a perpendicular trunk.

In Fig. 83 I have endeavoured to represent this long-jawed mastodon (*Tetrabelodon*) opening his mouth and rearing his flexible, boneless upper jaw as does the living elephant rear his trunk (Fig. 84). It is very difficult to form a definite idea as to how the *Tetrabelodon* made use of his tusks and horizontal “trunk.” The upper tusks have a sharp edge along the inner face strengthened by enamel, so that it is probable that, working against the tough skin pads of the lower jaw, they would serve for cutting vegetable matter.

My friend Rudyard Kipling has given a different account of the origin of the elephant's trunk, which he declares was formed by the pulling of the nose of an unfortunate young elephant which, before the days of trunks, stopped to drink some water from a pool, and was seized by an enormous crocodile just about the nose.



# ORIGIN OF THE ELEPHANT'S TRUNK



FIG. 83.—A drawing of the head of *Tetrabelodon angusidens* with open mouth and uplifted "trunk." (Original.)

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

The elephant pulled, and the crocodile held firm, and the result was the stretching of the elephant's nose till it became a trunk. This story was not told to Mr. Rudyard Kipling by the boy Mowgli of the *Jungle Book*, who I feel sure must have heard from the elephants the



FIG. 84.—Drawing of the head of the African Elephant with up-lifted trunk.

history as I have given it unless, as is not unlikely, they have forgotten all about the way in which their trunks grew, and would reject, as most men and women do, the notion that they have been derived by slow change in long ages of time from other and more simple animals.

## THE ORIGIN OF ELEPHANTS

The history, suggested above, of the gradual production of the elephant in the later ages of the world's history from a long-jawed creature has been wonderfully confirmed by the discoveries made in Egypt within the past four years by my friend Dr. Andrews, who is one of the staff of the Natural History Museum. Dr. Andrews was in Egypt four years ago on account of his health and joined a party of the officers of the great survey of Egypt, organized by Lord Cromer, in a visit to the Great Western Desert, the rainless, sandy waste lying west of the Nile, not very far from what is now called the Fayum, and where in Roman days was the great Lake Meris—now dried up to a mere brine-pool, in the salt water of which the freshwater fishes of the Nile still live. The surveying party intended to determine the geological age of these sands, which stretch for hundreds of miles, often rising into cliffs which are cut sharp by the wind and show horizontal stratification. Some fragments of bone had been recorded from this region twenty years ago by the traveller Schweinfurth, and Dr. Andrews, who is a special expert and authority in the interpretation of fossil bones, was hopeful of securing

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

some specimens for the Natural History Museum. He was rewarded far beyond his expectations. The party had to travel into an absolute desert waterless region, establishing a staff of camels which daily brought up water as far as three days' march into the sandy wilderness, return-



FIG. 85.—A scene in the Fayum Desert, showing the remains of silicified trees, embedded in the sands. From a photograph by Dr. Andrews.

ing with empty tanks on their backs to fetch more. In Fig. 85 is reproduced one of many photographs taken by Dr. Andrews. It shows the flat sandy desert with some fossilized lumps lying in the sand which are the remains of trees. The geologists determined that the sands in

## THE FOSSIL ANIMALS OF THE FAYUM

this region were of Upper Eocene and of Miocene age, and from them Dr. Andrews brought home some very interesting bones. These included remains of a more primitive mastodon than any as yet known and of an animal which he called *Meritherium* (after Lake Meris)—which is the connecting link between elephants and the central typidentate mammals. But the collection included also remains of great carnivores, of Hyrax of great size (like the Syrian coney), of Sea-cows (Sirenians), and of Tortoises, and a Snake sixty feet long. The Egyptian Survey has since in the most enthusiastic way sent further expeditions into this desert to collect the bones of the extinct animals half-buried there, and Dr. Andrews, by the direction of the Trustees of the British Museum and further assisted by a generous donation from Mr. de Winton, has twice again in succeeding years camped out in the desert and excavated the sands by the aid of a troop of native diggers.

In regard to the history of elephants, the upshot of Dr. Andrews' most important discoveries is that we find living here in the Upper Eocene period (older than the German or French Miocene with its *Tetrabelodon*) an

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

elephant ancestor of the mastodon kind to which Dr. Andrews has given the name Palæomastodon. The skulls and many limb-bones of

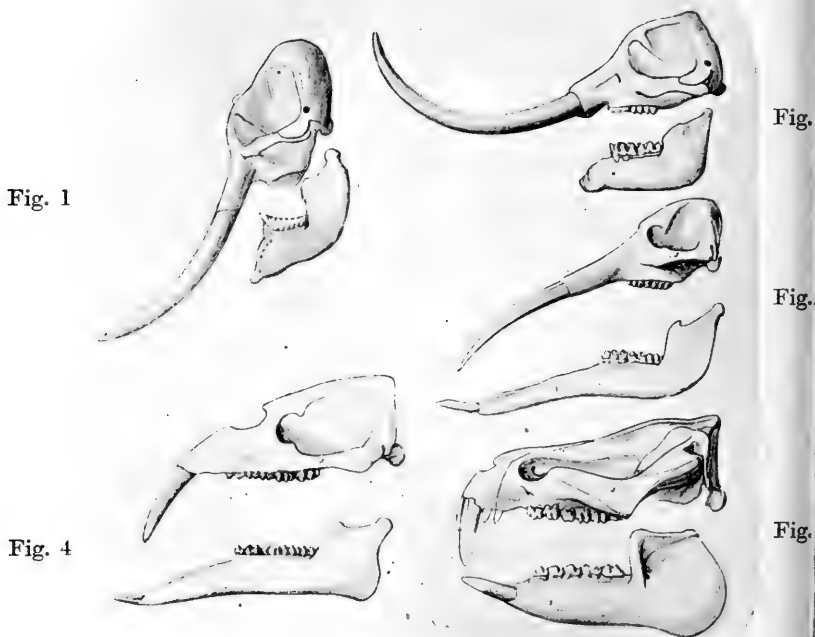


FIG. 86.—Profile views of a series of Elephant ancestors, from drawings by Dr. Andrews. 1. The Indian Elephant. 2. The American Mastodon. 3. The Miocene Tetrabelodon (France). 4. The Eocene Palæomastodon (Egypt). 5. The Eocene Meritherium (Egypt).

this interesting creature have been obtained, and are now reposing, some in Cromwell Road

## THE ANCESTORS OF ELEPHANTS

and some far away in the fine Museum of the Egyptian Survey in Cairo. In Fig. 86 a drawing (No. 4) is given of the skull of this Palæomastodon. The figure includes several other elephant forms. We have the skull and lower jaw of Tetrabelodon (No. 3), of the American mastodon (No. 2), and of the Indian elephant (No. 1). It will be seen at once how completely the Palæomastodon skull fills in the series leading back from the bulldog-faced elephants with short jaws to ordinary mammals. It has a fairly long skull and long bony face, with two large—but not *very* large—downwardly directed tusks. The jaws are long, but the lower one not so excessively long as that of Tetrabelodon (No. 3), and the cheek-teeth are there in nearly full number—as many as five in each half of each jaw. These are well seen in the view of the lower jaw given in Fig. 87 (No. 2), where the condition of the lower jaw of Palæomastodon is clearly contrasted with that of Tetrabelodon (*Mastodon angustidens*, No. 3).

In Palæomastodon we have arrived, by passing as far back as the Eocene strata, at an ancestral elephant-like creature which serves

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

to join the elephant stock on to more ordinary "normal" mammals. I should say that this beast was not so very big—about as large as a

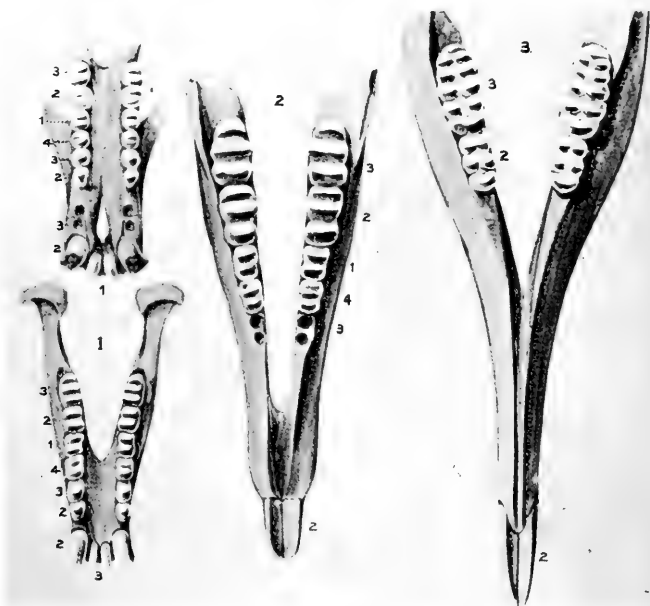


FIG. 87.—Lower jaws of extinct Elephants, from drawings by Dr. Andrews. 1. The lower jaw (and above it the upper jaw) of *Meritherium*, showing six molar or cheek-teeth in position. 2. The lower jaw of *Palæomastodon*. 3. The lower jaw of *Tetrabelodon*. (Compare with the lower jaws of more recent forms shown in Fig. 76, 77 and 78.)

fair-sized horse. Dr. Andrews' great triumph, however, is the discovery of a somewhat smaller animal in the same deposits, which is undoubtedly an elephant, and yet at first sight



THE EARLIEST ELEPHANT ANCESTOR  
 has no resemblance to one and probably had  
 no trunk at all, as certainly it had only small

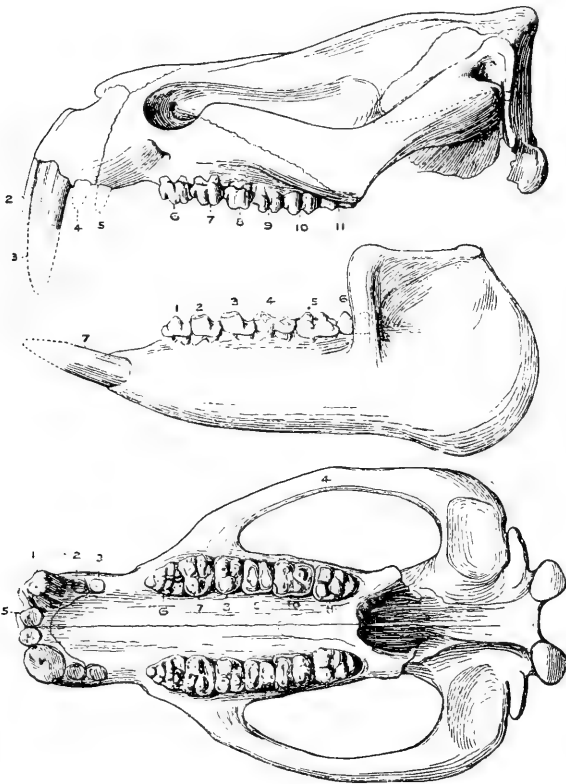


FIG. 88.—Profile and palatine views of the skull of *Meritherium Lyonsi*, as restored by Dr. Andrews. Note the elongated form of the skull and the normal development of teeth, viz. six incisors (above), a right and left small canine and six molars on each side (above and below).

tooth-like tusks, unworthy of comparison with



FIG. 89.—The Meritherium, discovered by Dr. Andrews, of the Natural History Museum, in the Upper Eocene strata of the Great Western desert of the Fayum, Egypt; a restored outline of the animal, drawn by Miss Woodward. Probably the upper lip is here represented as larger and more like an incipient trunk than is justified by the evidence given by the skull.

## THE EARLIEST ELEPHANT ANCESTOR

the great ivory columns of later elephants. This is the *Meritherium* seen in Fig 86 (No. 5), and more fully exhibited in Figs. 88 and 89. As is obvious at once, the skull of *Meritherium* does not suffer from "bull-dogging" at all; there is a fine, well-developed facial region, and the teeth are neither deficient in number nor greatly exaggerated individually. The "dentition" (that is to say, the enumeration of the complete series of teeth) approaches closely to that of the central mammals with typical dentition. In the upper jaw (as shown in Fig. 88) there are six front teeth or incisors, and it is the second of these on each side which is enlarged and is (so to speak) going to become the great tusk of the elephants. In the lower jaw there are four front teeth (see Fig. 87, No. 1). In the upper jaw we also find a small canine or dog-tooth; next the incisors and the cheek-teeth in both upper and lower jaw are fully represented, namely six on each side in each jaw—only one short of the type-number. And yet these cheek-teeth are quite obviously and recognizably mastodon teeth. They have the transverse ridges of the mastodon tooth (two or three) and are in other features like those of mastodons.

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

Here, then, we have arrived at a form which undoubtedly was closely related to the ancestors of all the elephants—if not itself actually that ancestor—and in it we see the origin of the elephant's peculiar structure. From this comparatively normal pig-like *Meritherium*, the wonderful elephant, with his upright face, his dependent trunk, and his huge spreading tusks, has been gradually, step by step, produced. And we have seen some, at least, of the intermediate steps—the elongation of the jaws and increase of the size of the incisors in *Palæomastodon*—carried still further in *Tetrabelodon*, and then followed by a shrinkage of the lower jaw and final evolution of the middle part of the face and upper jaw as the drooping, wonderful, prehensile trunk.

So much for the “great sagacious elephant” and his extinct relatives. Let us now turn for a few minutes to the most beautiful and the most helpful to man of all animals—the horse, nobler as he is bigger and stronger and more beautifully shaped, than man's other animal companion, the dog. The horse is curiously different from the central typical mammals in that he has only one toe on each foot instead of five, and further,

## THE ANCESTORS OF THE HORSE

in the complex pattern of his teeth. But immense numbers of extinct horses and horse-like creatures have been dug up, and we now know quite clearly all the stages leading from living horses back to four-toed and ultimately to five-toed ancestors. First of all I will put



FIG. 90.—Photograph of a model of a thoroughbred English horse, by Vashtag; one of a series in the Natural History Museum.

before you a photograph of a very beautiful model of an English thoroughbred (Fig. 90). There are a set of these models, both of horses and cattle, in the Natural History Museum: each is carefully modelled to one-fourth the

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

size of nature. They were executed by a Hungarian artist for the exhibition at Buda-Pesth some years ago, and we ought to have such a series made now in England of samples of all the best breeds. It is the only way of keeping a really complete and satisfactory record, and such models of known horses and cattle, made to-day, would be of immense interest and value in fifty years' time. But they are costly things to make, and can only be undertaken by the rich owners of race-horses and pedigree bulls.

Fig. 91 shows us the fore and the hind foot of the horse. As is very usual with photographers and those who prepare drawings and lantern-slides, the artist has placed the hind-foot in front and the front-foot behind. The hind-foot (that on the left) shows the heel-bone or "hock" (the calcaneum) standing forth at the top of the ankle. Below you see the three bones which constitute, as in our toes and fingers, what is called the digit. Then there is a long bone, which is the meta-tarsal bone. In the front-foot the similar bone is called the meta-carpal. At the top of these are several short bones jointed together; these are the tarsus or

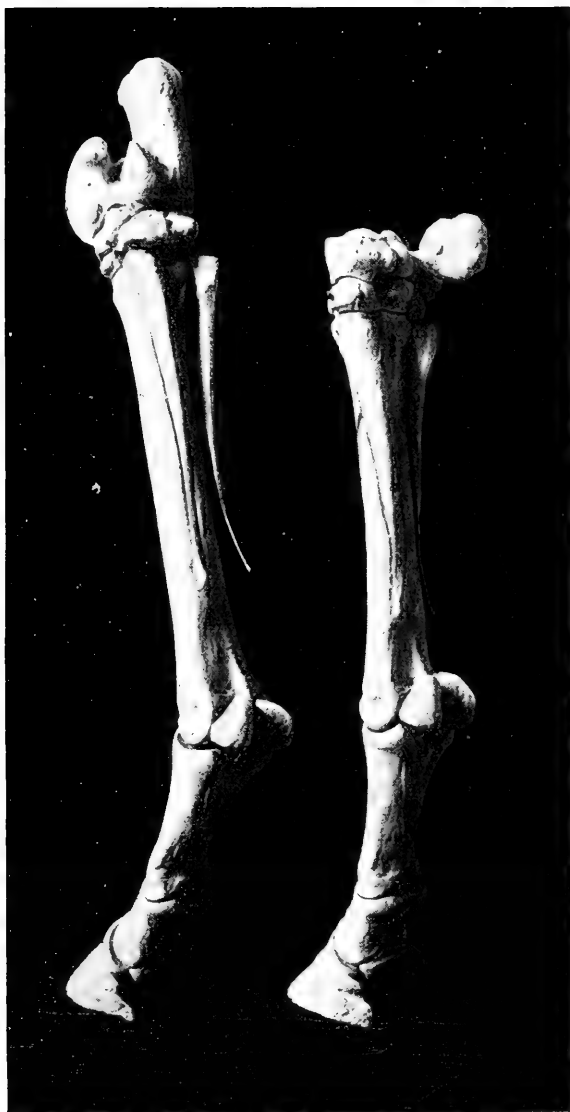


FIG. 91.—Hind and fore-foot of an English cart-horse, to show the single toe of three pieces—or joints—and the small splint-bones on each side of the long metatarsal and metacarpal bone.

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

ankle and the carpus or wrist (so-called "knee" of the horse's front-leg) respectively. You see, the horse walks on the very last joint of its toes, and keeps the foot and the hand upright, so that the heel is right above the toe instead of behind it, as in ourselves and the bears. On each side of the long bone of both fore and hind-foot you will see a small long bone, narrow and delicate. The nearer one of these delicate bones is not very clearly shown in the photograph, but still can be made out. These delicate "splint-bones," as they are called, are all that remain in the modern horse of two additional toes. There was a time when horses had three toes—far back in the Miocene strata we find horses which had three well-developed toes, each with a hoof resting on the ground (the *Mesohippus* and *Anchitherium*), and earlier than that we find a horse-like creature (*Hyracotherium*) with three nearly equal-sized toes on the hind-foot and four on the front foot (Fig. 92). In the Pliocene we find a three-toed horse in Europe known as the *Hipparion* (and a similar kind is dug up in America), which had three toes on each foot; but the side toes were getting small, were in fact like the "petti-toes"



## THE ANCESTORS OF THE HORSE

of the pig, and of cattle, and of the reindeer. They did not touch the ground (Fig. 93), and

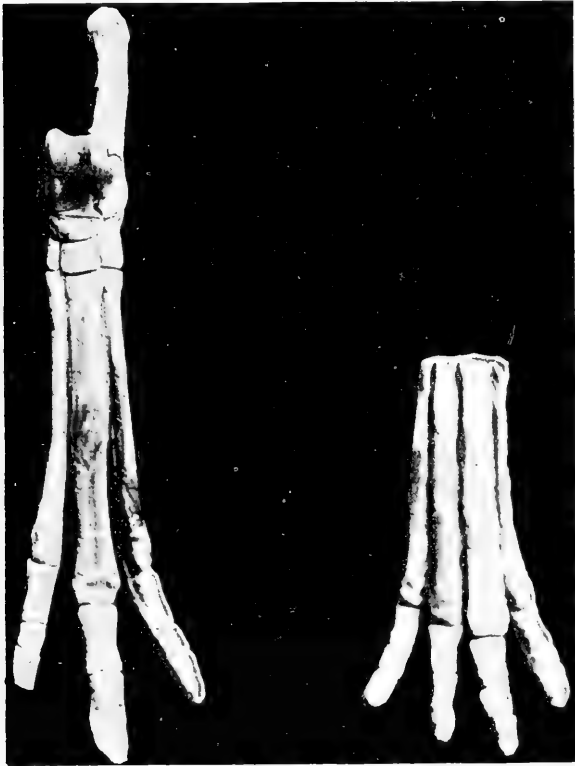


FIG. 92.—Hind-foot (to the left) and fore-foot (to the right) of the horse-ancestor, *Hyracotherium*. The fore-foot is seen to have four toes in full development. Photographed from specimens in the Natural History Museum.

were evidently on the way to disappearing, leading to the single-toed modern horse, with

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

its splint-bones, as the sole representatives of

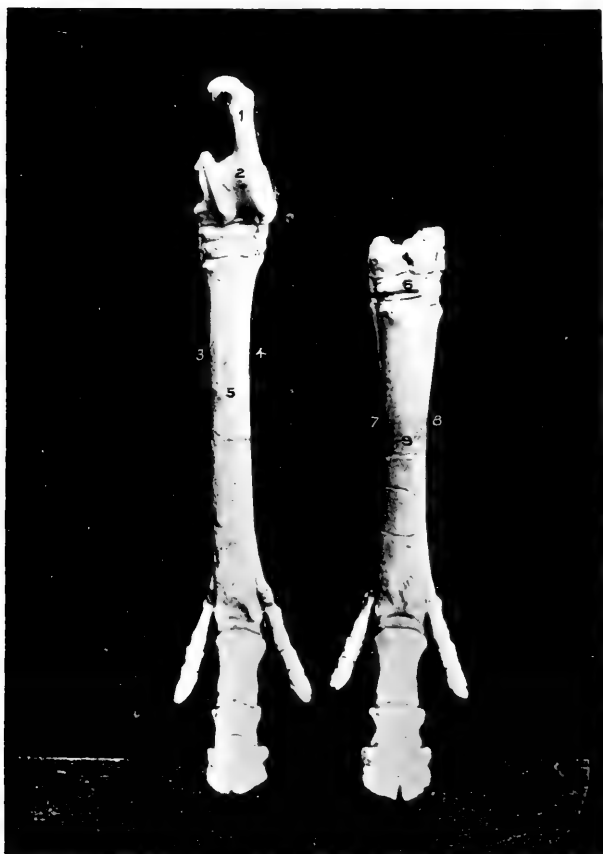


FIG. 93.—The hind- and the fore-foot of *Hipparion*, one of the three-toed ancestors of the horse. The side-toes were "pettitoes" and did not reach the ground.

the two outer toes. Occasionally living horses

## THE ANCESTORS OF THE HORSE

are born with two complete little toes provided with hoofs and attached to the splint-bones, one on each side of the big central toe, "throwing back," as the term is, to their three-toed ancestors. Beyond the stage, with four equal toes on the front foot and three on the hind-foot, which is exhibited by a quite small horse-

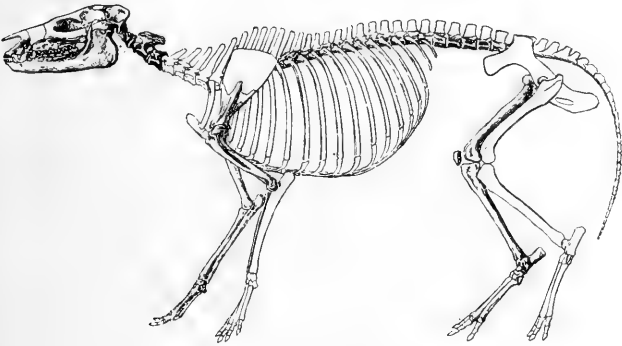


FIG. 94.—The skeleton of *Hyracotherium*, an ancestor of the modern horse, found in Eocene strata.

like creature—the *Hyracotherium* shown in Figs. 94 and 95—we can trace the pedigree of the horse to a five-toed ancestor, the *Phenacodus* (Fig. 96). The later stages of this history, from the *Meshippus* to the modern horse, have been traced by very abundant fossil remains of many steps or stages in the gradual change. Not only

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

has there been a gradual change from the three-toed to the one-toed condition, but there has



FIG. 95.—Restoration of the probable appearance of the Hyracotherium, an Eocene ancestor of the horse, with four toes on the front-foot and three on the hind-foot. It was not bigger than a large dog. After a drawing issued by the American Museum, New York.

been a great increase in size, and moreover the cheek-teeth have gradually become more and

## THE ANCESTORS OF THE HORSE

more complex in the pattern which they show when worn down. In Fig. 97 crowns of the



FIG. 96.—Skeleton of the Phenacodus, a five-toed Eocene animal related to the ancestors of the horse.

cheek-teeth of the Mesohippus are represented, and in Fig. 98 the crown of an upper molar of

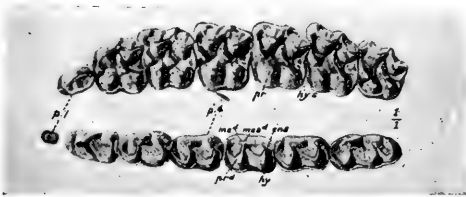


FIG. 97.—Cheek-teeth, or molars, of the upper and lower jaw, left side, of *Mesohippus Bairdii*, from the Middle Oligocene of South Dakota.

a recent horse. There are a great number of

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

interesting details in the history of the changes of the teeth and toes of the ancestral series of horses which it is not within my scope to describe here, but they may be studied on speci-

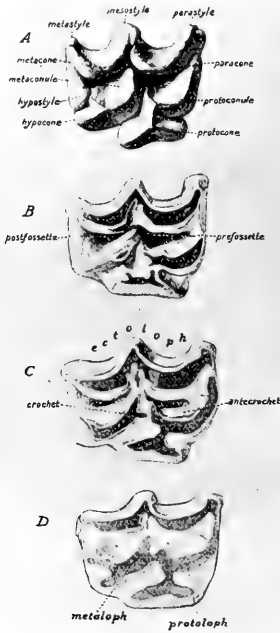


FIG. 98.—Upper molar tooth of a recent horse. *A*, uncut and unworn; *B*, *C*, *D*, in successive stages of wear.

mens of a variety of ancestral horses which have been set out for the purpose in the Natural History Museum.

The rhinoceroses of to-day—the unicorn or

## RECENT AND EXTINCT RHINOCEROSES

Indian rhinoceros and the two-horned African rhinoceroses, one with a pointed upper lip and the other with a square, broad mouth—have been preceded by a whole regiment of extinct rhinoceroses, whose bones and skulls are dug up in the Pleistocene, Pliocene and Miocene strata. In Fig. 99 is represented the complete



FIG. 99.—The skeleton of *Rhinoceros antiquitatis*, the woolly rhinoceros of the late Pleistocene period in Europe and Siberia.

skeleton of the commonest kind of fossil rhinoceros, the skull of which was dug up in London the other day and is shown in Fig. 5. This rhinoceros had a hairy coat like the mammoth, and is found sometimes with the mammoth in frozen gravel in Siberia. The living

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

rhinoceros most like it is the African square-mouthed rhinoceros or Burchell's rhinoceros (*Rhinoceros simus*), misleadingly called sometimes the white rhinoceros (Fig. 100). Many of the extinct kinds of rhinoceros had two horns, one behind the other like the African rhinoceros. The horn of the rhinoceros is truly horny in

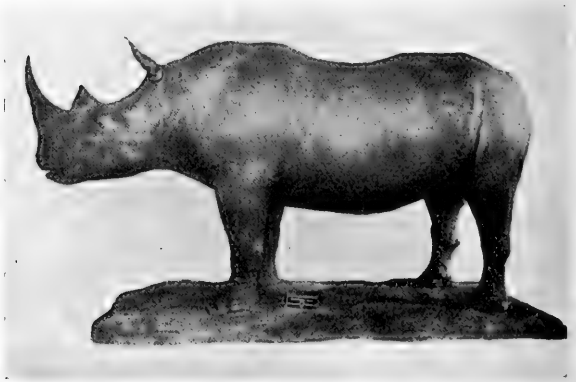


FIG. 100.—Photograph of a stuffed specimen of the square mouthed African Rhinoceros (*Rhinoceros simus*) preserved in the Natural History Museum.

substance, and fibrous. It is not bone, as are the horns of stags, nor has it a core of bone as have the horns of sheep, cattle and antelopes. Sometimes, however, there is a fairly big boss of bone, which forms a sort of base or pedestal for the horny horn. One great extinct beast (the *Elasmotherium*), allied to the rhinoceroses, had a



# THE TITANOTHERIUM

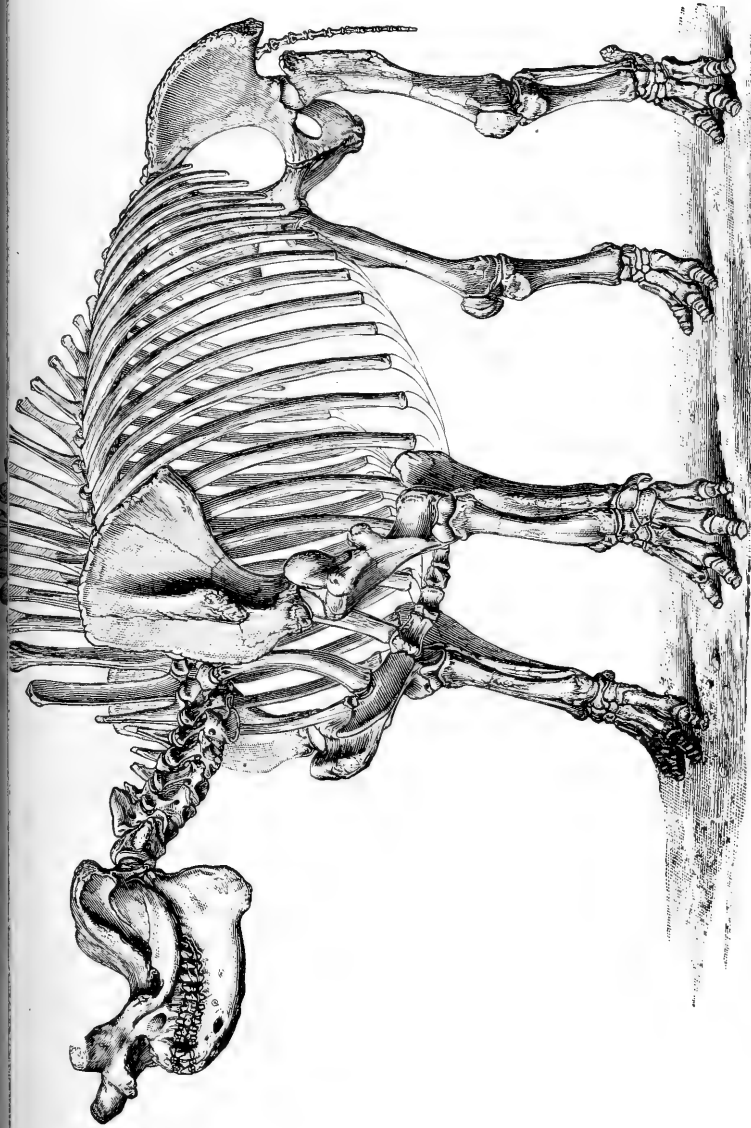


Fig. 101.—Skeleton of *Titanotherium (Brontops) robustum*, from the Lower Miocene of Dakota.

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

great horn, carried on a huge boss on the middle of its head instead of on the nose, whilst in the Miocene of North America complete skeletons have been found of an enormous creature allied



FIG. 102.—Photograph of a skull of Titanotherium in the Natural History Museum, showing the huge molar teeth

to the rhinoceroses, but having a pair of horns, perched side by side on the nose, instead of one in the mid-line, or two placed one behind the other. The skeleton of this great beast, called

## THE EXTINCT DINOCERAS

Titanotherium, is shown in Fig. 101, and in Figs. 102 and 103 photographic views of the skull are given.

As large as the rhinoceros, but having a very different arrangement of the bones of its wrists and ankles, and very different teeth and horns,

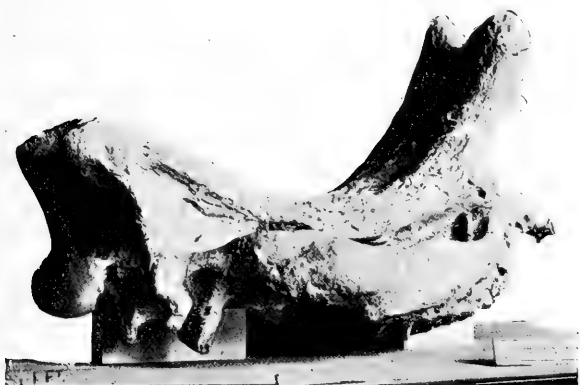


FIG. 103.—Side-view of the skull of Titanotherium, to show the two bony upgrowths of the nasal region which carried horns. Photographed from a specimen in the Natural History Museum.

are the extraordinary creatures known as Dinoceras, whole skeletons of which have been disinterred from the Upper Eocene of Wyoming in the United States. As many as two hundred individuals were studied by Professor Marsh, who has written a large treatise on them. These creatures had three pairs of horns on the

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

top of the head (Fig. 104) and a pair of great tusks formed by the enlargement of the upper canine teeth. The horns are outgrowths of the bone of the skull and were probably covered by

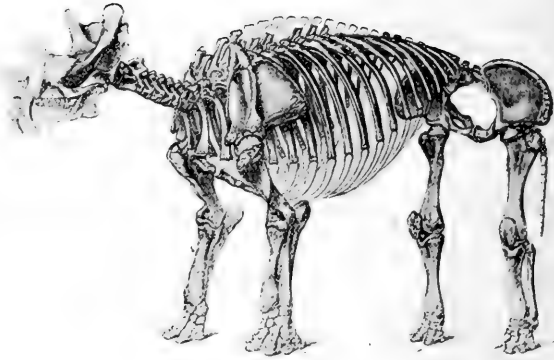


FIG. 104.—Skeleton of *Dinoceras mirabile*, from the Upper Eocene of Wyoming, U.S.A.

hardened skin. The probable appearance of this creature in life is shown in Fig. 105.

A very interesting fact has been observed about the brains of these most ancient big mam-

## THE DINOCERAS

mals, viz., the Dinoceras occurring so far back as in the Upper Eocene, and the Titanotherium



FIG. 105.—Probable appearance in life of the *Dinoceras mirabile* of North America.

of the Lower Miocene. We can get castings from the interior of the skulls and compare them

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

with those of recent rhinoceros, hippopotamus and horse (Fig. 106), and it is found that although *Dinoceras* and *Titanotherium* were bigger than the largest rhinoceros of to-day, yet they had quite small brains, not more than an eighth the volume of that of the recent big animals. The subject has not been so fully

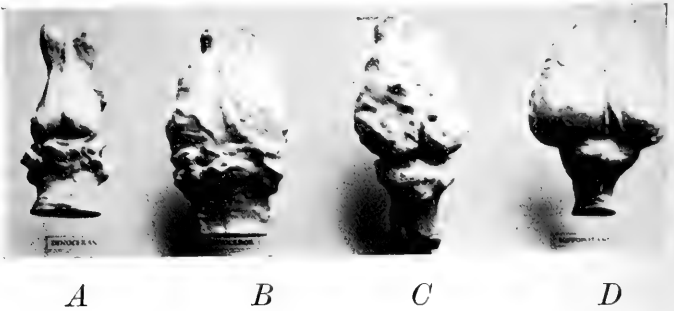


FIG. 106.—Photographs of plaster casts of the brain-cavity of *A*, *Dinoceras*; *B*, *Hippopotamus*; *C*, *Horse*; and *D*, *Rhinoceros*: to show the relatively very small size of the brain of *Dinoceras*.

looked into yet as it deserves, but it seems that modern animals, the animals which have survived, have much bigger brains than those which died out in the Eocene and Miocene times, and it is probable that they have survived to a large extent because of the value to them, in the struggle for existence, of the bigger brain.

## THE SIZE OF BRAINS

It seems that a small brain may serve very well to guide the great animal machine in established ways, but in order to learn new things in its own lifetime an animal must have a big brain—indeed, a very big brain. And the kind of animal which can learn—that is to say, can be educated—will, in the long run, beat the kind which has too small a brain to be capable of learning. This is the significance, not only of the big brains of recent rhinoceros and horse as compared with those of Titanotherium and Dinoceras, but it is also the significance of the big brain of man, which is far bigger than that of any other animal in proportion to the bulk of his body and limbs.

Another huge horned animal has quite lately become known which in some ways resembles Titanotherium and Dinoceras, but has to be kept apart from them on account of being really unlike them in its teeth and skull and feet-bones, although having a general resemblance to them in outline and bulk. This creature was found only three years ago in the same Upper Eocene sands of the Egyptian Fayum from which Dr. Andrews obtained the ancestors of elephants. The skull of this most strange animal is shown

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

in Fig. 107, and a representation of what we suppose it looked like in life is given in Fig. 108. This wonderful beast was discovered by Mr.



FIG. 107.—Drawing of the skull of *Arsinoitherium Zitteli* (Beadnell), from the specimen preserved in the Natural History Museum. The skull was found in the Fayum Desert, and is nearly three feet in length.

Beadnell of the Egyptian Geological Survey, and the name *Arsinoitherium* was given to it



## QUEEN ARSINÖES GREAT BEAST

by him because the Egyptian queens of Greek race—named Arsinöe—had a palace near where



FIG. 108.—A drawing, showing the probable appearance in life of Arsinötherium. (Original)

the bones were dug up. Two thousand years ago many parts which are now sandy desert

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

were well-watered and under cultivation. The drawing given in Fig. 107 is prepared from a skull in the Natural History Museum, where we have brought together portions of several other skulls and the complete set of bones of the skeleton dug up, some by Dr. Andrews and some by the energetic officers of the Egyptian Survey. The huge pair of horns are entirely bony outgrowths of the nasal bones, and are hollow. A small second pair of horns lies behind them. Probably in life the big horns were clothed with a horny case like the horn of a bull or antelope. The teeth are most remarkable, since they form a complete series, without a break, and are present to the full number—seven cheek-teeth, a canine and three incisors on each side in both upper and lower jaw—wonderfully graduated in form and size.

A complete account and illustrations of the remains of this most remarkable beast, the skull of which alone is nearly three feet in length, will soon be given by Dr. Andrews in a large volume on the extinct animals obtained from the sands of the Egyptian Fayum which is now in preparation and will be published by the Trustees of the British Museum.

## CHAPTER IV

EXTINCT GIRAFFES AND THE OKAPI — THE  
GIANT SLOTHS OF SOUTH AMERICA AND  
THE GIANT KANGAROOS OF AUSTRALIA.

**T**HERE are a vast number of mammalian extinct animals, related to the cattle, sheep, goats, antelopes, deer, lions, bears and hyenas of to-day, and other less-known warm-blooded hairy quadrupeds, besides many, such as the *Dinoceras* and *Arsinötherium*, which have left no successors like themselves to represent them in our days. Of both kinds, those which have quite died out and disappeared and those which have representatives alive to-day, you may see the bones and skulls in the Natural History Museum. I have not space here to speak of more than a few extinct creatures, and will at once ask you to look at some members of the group which to-day is

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

familiar to us through the beautiful giraffe of Africa—the camel-leopard, the spotted, long-necked creature which will very soon be killed out by the intrusion of civilized man into the African wilds.



FIG. 109.—Drawing of the head of the five-horned Giraffe ; the single middle horn is seen in front and the two of the left side farther back. From a specimen shot at Mount Elgon by Sir Harry Johnston.

We have already seen a photograph of the giraffe in the first lecture, with its long neck reaching forward and forming a continuous line with the back. To-day I show you a sketch (Fig. 109) of what Sir Harry Johnston

## THE FIVE-HORNED GIRAFFE

calls the five-horned giraffe. The ordinary giraffe has a pair of short bony outgrowths or so-called horns on the parietal region of the skull and a single horn of similar character between the eyes. But the five-horned giraffe has an additional short pair of outgrowths at

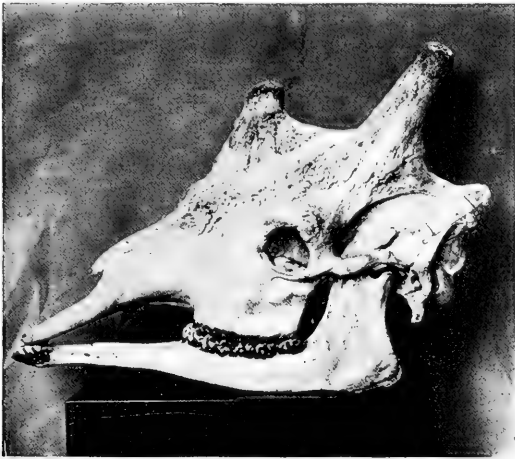


FIG. 110.—Photograph of the skull of the five-horned Giraffe.

the back of the head. All these “horns” in the giraffe are covered in life with living skin. There is no horny covering to them, nor do they grow through the skin and project as naked bone, as do the antlers of deer. The skull of the five-horned giraffe is seen in Fig. 110. Whilst the two hinder knobs, or horns, are real

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

“outgrowths” of the skull, the chief horns (the median and the large pair, of which only the left-hand one is visible in the photograph) originate as separate bony pieces, which, after growing for a time as distinct bones, join tightly to the skull. Sir Harry Johnston shot the five-horned giraffe in the great “reserve” or protected area formed by the crater of the extinct volcano Mount Elgon—some five miles across—in the British Central African Protectorate of Uganda. In less than three weeks from the day on which he shot these specimens he was in London, and brought the skins and skulls of the specimens to the Natural History Museum! Central Africa, under the equator, can now be reached in that short space of time.

In Miocene times there were other large animals allied to the giraffe, but without so great a length of neck. The giraffe family have double hoofs, like the cattle, sheep, antelopes and deer, to which they are allied—not single or triple hoofs, like the horse family. Besides their peculiar and very primitive horns they have another small but definite peculiarity. The outermost of the group of eight front teeth in the lower jaw corresponds in position to the canine

## THE CANINE TOOTH OF GIRAFFES

of the pig and other typi-dentate animals (animals with "typical" dentition, that is to say, little altered from the form and arrangement in early mammalian ancestors). In the cattle, sheep, antelopes and deer, this tooth has a quite simple chisel-like crown, like that of the incisors. But in the giraffe it is very peculiar: the crown

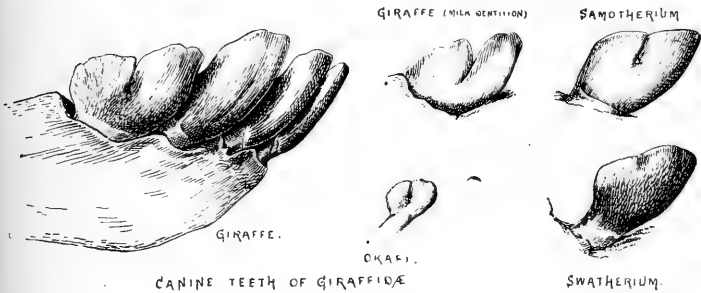


FIG. 111.—Front teeth of the lower jaw of the Giraffe and allied animals, namely, the Samotherium, the Sivatherium, and the Okapi, to show the bilobed or bifoliate broad canine tooth with its split crown—only known in animals of the giraffe family.

is divided by a slit into two halves, each of which is large and broad. It is described as bi-foliate (see Fig. 111). No other mammalian animal was known with this peculiar shape of this particular tooth among living animals until the other day. But a great extinct animal from India; the Sivatherium (Fig. 112), with much

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

larger horns than a giraffe, has this same bifoliate canine on each side in the lower jaw (Fig. 111), and is shown, by this and other facts in its structure, to be clearly related to the living giraffe. Another creature from the Miocene strata



FIG. 112.—Photograph of a restored skull of the Sivatherium from the Miocene strata of the Sewalik Hills, India. The antler-like branching horns contrast with the corresponding simple horns of the giraffe.

of the isle of Samos—the Samotherium (Fig. 113)—has also the bifid lower canines, and is closely allied to giraffes. The entire skeleton of a giraffe-like animal with a moderate length



## THE DISCOVERY OF THE OKAPI

of neck has been found in Miocene beds in Greece, and is called the Helladotherium (Fig. 114). Naturalists were, therefore, deeply interested when Sir Harry Johnston obtained, some four years ago, from the borders of the Congo State where the great Congo forest approaches the river Semliki, which separates Congo-land

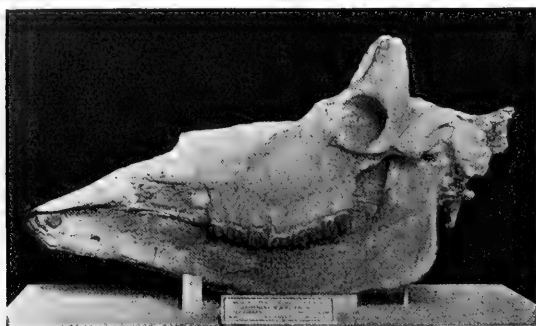


FIG. 113.—Photograph of the skull of the Samotherium, a giraffe-like animal from the Miocene strata of the Greek Island of Samos.

from Uganda, a skin and two skulls of a new animal—the Okapi—which he rightly surmised to be a second living genus, or kind, allied to the giraffe. I gave the name *Okapia* to Sir Harry Johnston's new animal; it is stuffed and exhibited in the Natural History Museum. Like the giraffe, it has paired hoofs and a rather long

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

neck, but it is striped on the legs and haunches, instead of being spotted. The most decisive point about its relationship is found in the canines of the lower jaw which, although small in size, are bifid or bi-foliate, as are those of the giraffe

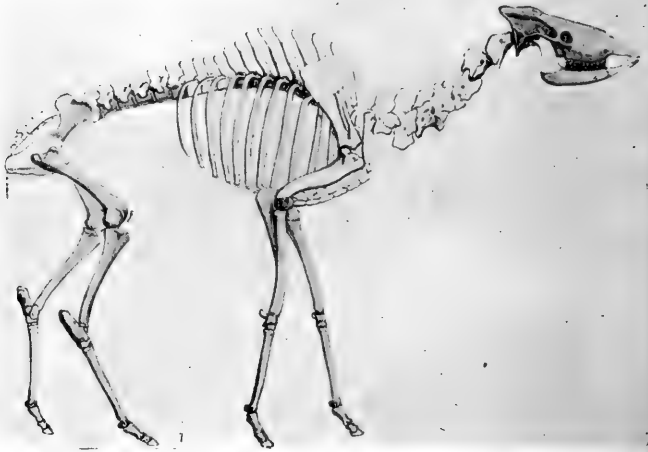


FIG. 114.—Restored skeleton of the giraffe-like animal *Helladotherium*, discovered in Miocene strata at Pikermi, near Athens, by M. Gaudry.

(see Fig. 111). Our specimen (Fig. 115) is about as big as a large stag; it has no horns, and is not adult. It is probably a female; the male, we now know, has a pair of horns (Fig. 116), and is extremely close, in the details of its skull, to the *Samotherium* (Fig. 113). Some fifteen speci-

## THE OKAPI

mens of this new and rare animal have been received in Europe since Sir Harry Johnston discovered it ; it is probable that there are two species, a smaller and a larger, living both in the forests of the Congo in the centre of

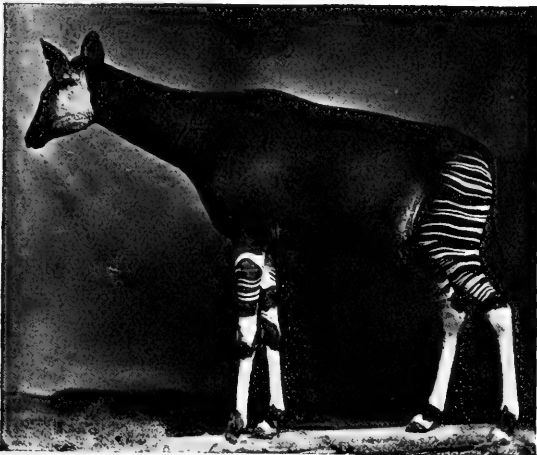


FIG. 115.—Photograph of the specimen of the Okapi (*Okapia erichsoni*) obtained by Sir Harry Johnston near the Semliki river in Central Africa. The specimen is a female, not fully grown, and is of the size of a very large donkey.

Africa. As they live in these immense dark gloomy and damp forests they are very difficult to shoot or to catch, and moreover they are not abundant. The natives cut the striped skin into girdles and bands for ornament. Two of these were sent home by Sir Harry Johnston

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

before the animal was known, and were described as coming from a new species of zebra which was named *Equus Johnstoni* by Dr. Sclater (see Fig. 117).



FIG. 116.—Photograph of a skull of a male Okapi, showing the simple pointed bony horns like those of the Samotherium. The horns were not enclosed in a horny case as are those of cattle, sheep and antelopes.

Some people, on account of the Okapi being striped somewhat like a zebra, whilst it has the double hoofs of giraffes and also paired horns, have supposed that it might be a hybrid or “mule” between a zebra and a giraffe. This

## NO HYBRIDS IN NATURE

is, however, a supposition which every naturalist knows to be quite out of the bounds of remotest probability. It is a fact that "mules" or hybrids never are produced by animals living in their natural conditions, except in a few rare cases among aquatic animals whose eggs are fertilized in the water after they have been laid.

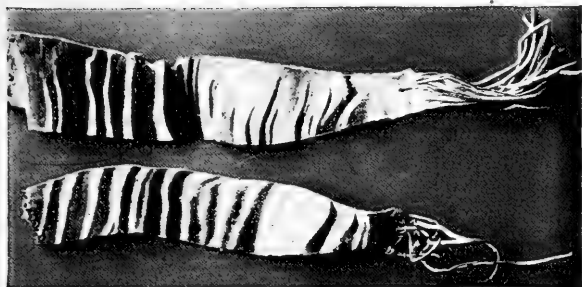


FIG. 117.—Photograph of the two "bandoliers" cut from the striped part of the skin of an Okapi, which, when sent home by Sir Harry Johnston, were at first thought to have been cut from the skin of a new kind of zebra.

And no one has ever produced, even in captivity, a hybrid between any creatures so unlike each other as a double-hoofed and a single-hoofed mammal.

There are a good many instances in which small living animals were represented in the past by gigantic forms very close in structure to the little living beasts, but of much greater

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

size. Hence it is concluded that these particular living animals are the reduced and dwindled representatives of a race of primeval monsters. There is some truth in this, as you will see from the history of the living sloths and armadilloes of South America, as compared with the giant extinct sloths and armadilloes dug up in that country. The same relation is true as to the kangaroos and wombats now living in Australia as compared with gigantic extinct creatures of the same kind (Fig. 182) which are dug up in Australia in sands and morasses of late geological date. But it is a great mistake to conclude from this that it is a law of Nature that recent animals are all small and insignificant as compared with their representatives in the past. That is simply not true. Recent horses are bigger than extinct ones, and much bigger than the three-toed and four-toed ancestors of horses. Recent elephants are as big as any that have existed, and much bigger than the earlier elephantine ancestors. There never has been any creature of any kind—mammal, reptile, bird, or fish—in any geological period we know of, so big as some of the existing whales, the Sperm Whale, the Great Rorqual, and the Whale-bone whales.

## BEASTS OF MONSTROUS SIZE

It is true that there were enormous reptiles in the past, far larger than any living crocodiles, standing fourteen feet at the loins and measuring eighty feet from the tip of the snout to the tip of the tail; but their bodies did not weigh much more than that of a big African elephant and were small compared with whales. So let us be under no illusions as to extinct monsters, and proceed to look at those of South America with simple courage and confidence in our own day.

South America (see the map, Fig. 42) was not so long ago a vast island and connected at an earlier period with Australia. Later it has joined on to North America. Its own peculiar productions in the way of animals appear to be the members of the group of mammals called Edentata—very peculiar forms, with strange teeth, and none at all in the front of the jaws. From North America, when it joined on there, it received the mastodons, horses, tigers, tapirs, and other kinds produced in the Holarctic area. This seems to have led to the dying out of the big kinds of Edentata, and now there are only the small tree-sloths (Fig. 118), the small armadilloes (Fig. 119) and the strange-looking ant-eaters. But in quite late geological deposits in

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

South America we find the bones of gigantic armadilloes and of gigantic ground sloths, which



FIG. 118.—Photograph of a stuffed specimen of the Two-toed Sloth (*Choloepus didactylus*) hanging from a branch of a tree.

lasted on till the time when man appeared on the scene, though now extinct. A great variety of large creatures of the kinds known as Edentata



## THE ARMADILLO



FIG. 119.—Photograph of a stuffed specimen of the Hairy Armadillo or Peludo (*Dasypus villosus*).

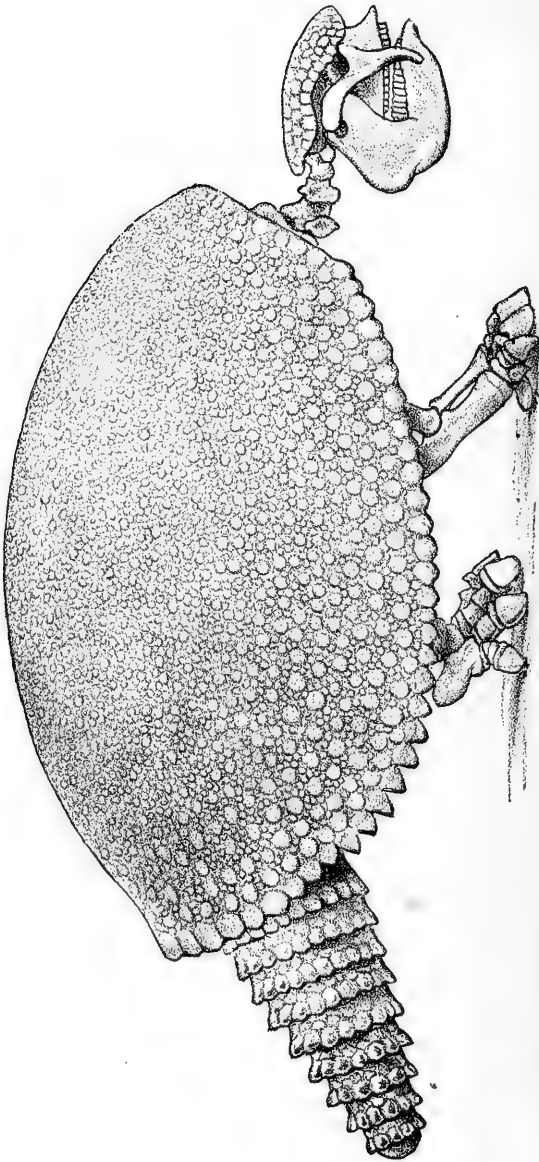


FIG. 120.—Drawing of the skeleton of the great extinct armadillo-like animal called Glyptodon from the Pleistocene of the Argentine State in South America. The unjointed bone armour of the body, tail, and top of the head, is shown. This figure is lent by the Trustees of the British Museum.

## EXTINCT GIANT ARMADILLOES

preceded these in earlier geological times in South America.

The Glyptodons (Fig. 120), of which there are



FIG. 121.—Probable appearance in life of the Giant Ground Sloth, the *Megatherium giganteum*, as big as an elephant, found in the Pleistocene gravels of South America. For the skeleton of the same animal, see the photograph on p. 7.

several different kinds, were enormous armadilloes, as big as an ox. Like the recent little armadilloes they carried a hard case formed by

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

bones in the skin, but this was not jointed so that they could roll up into a ball, as can the living armadilloes.

The Megatherium (Fig. 121) was nearly as big as an elephant, and was very closely similar in its skeleton and teeth to the little living sloths of to-day. But it stood on the ground and pulled the trees down in order to eat the tender young branches instead of climbing up into the trees and living there as the present sloths do.

Not quite so big as the Megatherium was the Mylodon, which lived at the same time. The remains of both are found in the comparatively recent (Pleistocene) gravels of the Argentine Republic. The skeletons of these animals may be seen side by side in the Natural History Museum.

In Fig. 122 is represented the skeleton of the Mylodon, and just above it, for comparison, is placed the photograph of the skeleton of the two-toed sloth. The relative sizes of the two are shown and the sloth's skeleton is placed in the same position as that of the extinct Mylodon, although in life it is always hanging from the branches of trees and never goes on all fours on the ground.

## THE MYLODON

The Mylodon had, we know, a number of little bony pieces scattered in its skin in the

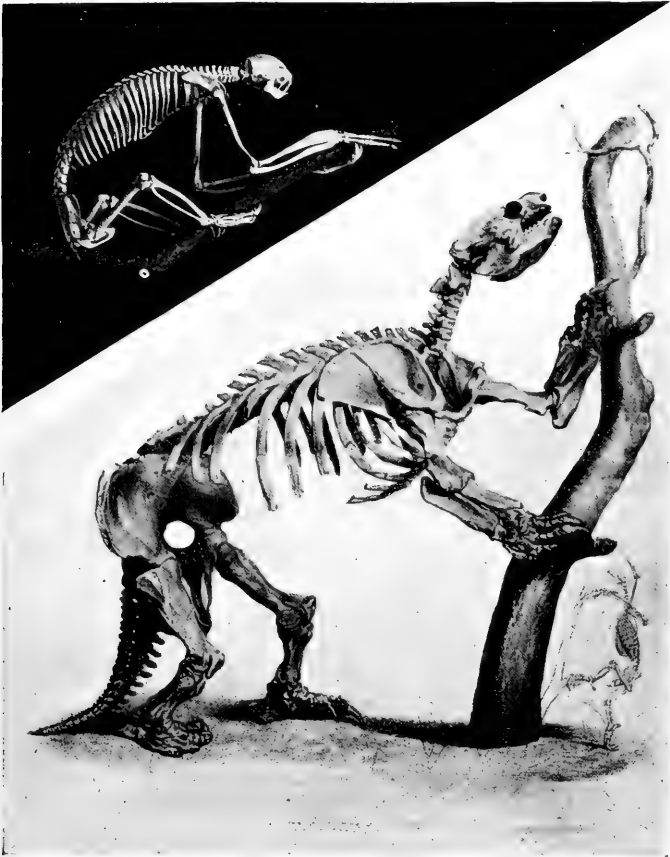


FIG. 122.—The skeleton of *Mylodon robustus*, one of the giant Ground Sloths of the Argentine, about as big as a large bull. Above it is placed the skeleton of a recent Tree-Sloth for comparison. Both skeletons are reduced to the same scale.

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

region of the back, like the pieces forming the bony case of the armadilloes and Glyptodons, but not fitted closely together. It was supposed that the Mylodon, like all the gigantic Edentata of South America, had long ceased to exist and was extinct as long ago as the mammoth and the woolly rhinoceros of our



FIG. 123.—View, looking outwards, from the mouth of the cavern on the fiord of the Ultima Speranza in Southern Patagonia, in which have been found the skin and hair and the bones with cartilage, blood and tendon and the dung of the Mylodon and other animals, proving its co-existence with man and its survival until a period estimated variously at fifty or a thousand years ago.

own country. But about seven years ago a traveller (Dr. Nordenskjöld) found in Patagonia, at the end of a fiord near the Chilian coast, a vast cavern (Fig. 123), and from this cavern the white settlers living in a farm close by had removed an enormous piece of skin (Fig. 124) covered with greenish-brown hair and studded on

## FRESH REMAINS OF MYLODON

its inner side with little knobs of bone (Fig. 125) ! The skin was dry, but undecomposed, and when soaked in water gave out the smell of decomposing animal matter. It was evidently a piece of the skin of a Mylodon which had survived in

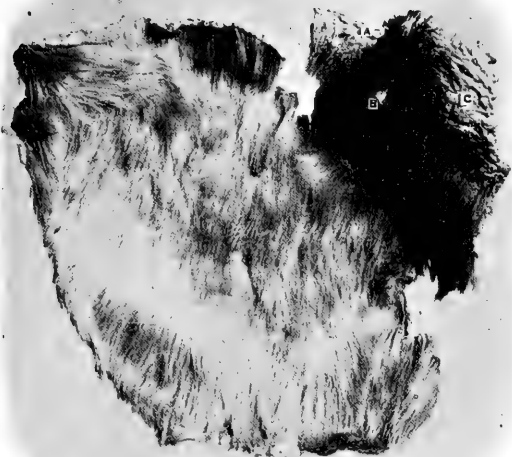


FIG. 124.—Photograph of a piece of the skin of the Mylodon (also called *Grypotherium darwini*) showing the coarse greenish-coloured hair. From a specimen found in the cave of the Ultima Speranza in South-west Patagonia.

this region until modern times ! Further explorations were made in the cavern by Dr. Moreno, of the Museum of La Plata, and by other persons, and as a result an immense quantity of bones were obtained and more portions of

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

the skin of *Mylodon* with the hair on. The cavern had been inhabited probably several centuries ago by Indians, and human bones as well as "forks" made out of dogs' bones (Fig. 126) were obtained. The remains of as many as

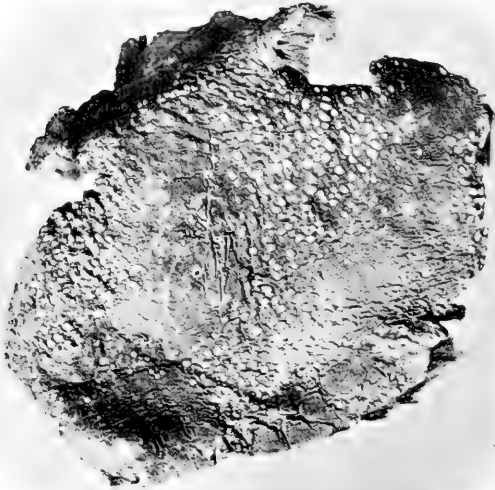


FIG. 125.—The under side of the same piece of skin as that shown in Fig. 124. It shows the small oval ossicles scattered in the deep substance of the skin.

twenty *Mylodons* have been obtained from the cavern, and many of the bones have been cut or broken by human agency, the inhabitants of the cave having fed upon the *Mylodons* and split the bones to obtain the marrow! Some of the *Mylodon* bones, skulls, jaw-bones, leg-



## THE FRESH REMAINS OF MYLODON

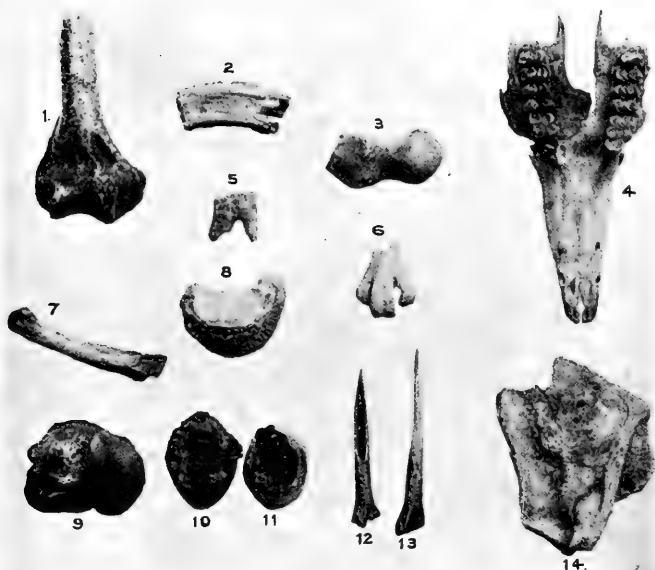


FIG. 126.—Photograph of various specimens found with the remains of the Mylodon in the Ultima Speranza cave. 1. The lower end of the humerus (upper arm bone) of a very large jaguar (*Felis onca*). 2. Molar tooth of an extinct horse (*Onohippidium*). 3. End of femur of a huge rat (*Megamys*). 4. Upper jaw of guanacho (*Auchenia*). 5. Molar tooth of same. 6. Lower end of lowest leg-bone of the rhea. 7. Foot-bone of the jaguar. 8. Hoof-bone of the fossil horse. 9, 10, 11. Dung of the Mylodon. 12, 13. Two bones of a Dog, with ends sharpened by human agency. 14. Distorted human shoulder-blade, probably of a woman.

bones, etc., are smeared with blood and the soft tendon and membrane are still attached. The cartilage at the end of the long bones is still

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

in place, dried and cracked in the drying. Not only that, but great balls of dung were found made up of the remains of masticated grass,



FIG. 127.—Photograph of remains of *Mylodon* from the cave of the Ultima Speranza. 1. Shaft of tibia. 2. Bone of a claw. 3, 4, 5, 6. Claws (horny). 7, 8. Rudimentary toe bones. 9, 10. Cervical vertebrae. 11. Lower end of scapula. 12, 13. Broken bones.

indicating that the *Mylodons* lived in the cave. Moreover, a very large quantity of cut grass was found in the cave, and it has been surmised

## MYLODONS LIVING IN THE CAVE

that the Indians kept the Mylodons alive in the cavern and fed them with hay brought in from the outside. Specimens of these objects and of others to be mentioned below are now in the



FIG. 128.—Photograph of a “barrel-full of bones” obtained by prospectors from the cave of Ultima Speranza, three years after the first finds, and offered for sale to the Natural History Museum. Unfortunately it was not possible to send a reply to the owners in time, and the collection was dispersed. Skulls, jaws, and other bones of Mylodon are to be seen as well as a large skull of a jaguar, and bones and teeth of horses.

Natural History Museum, and some idea of their number and variety may be formed from the photographs reproduced in Figs. 126 to 131.

Besides the remains of the Mylodons and of

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

man—all lying loosely covered by a greater or less depth of blown sand, and in some parts by chopped hay—the cavern has yielded bones and teeth and many horny hoofs of horses, apparently belonging to the extinct and very peculiar

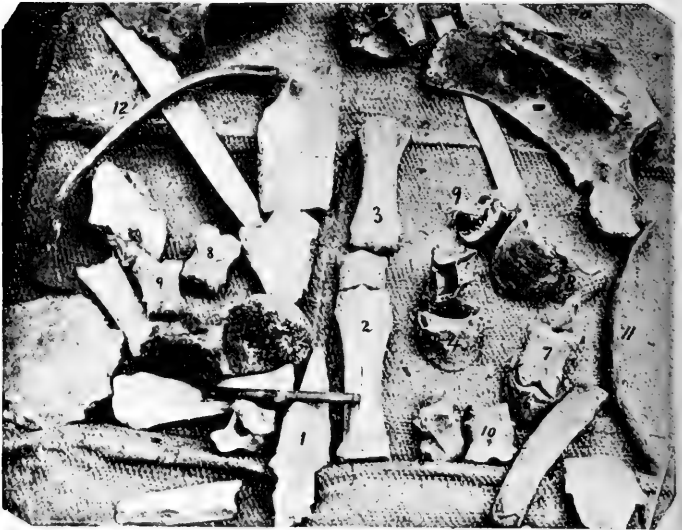


FIG. 129.—Photograph having the same history as that shown in Fig. 128.

South American genus *Onhippidium*, the skull and bones of a very large kind of jaguar, the skull of a young lama, and bones of other kinds. We have not yet a full account of all that has been found in the cave, nor have the contents,

## THE CAVE OF THE MYLODONS

unfortunately, been removed with sufficient care to enable us to say which were lying more deeply in the sand and which were at a higher level and therefore more recently living. The cavern is in a very remote spot and seems to

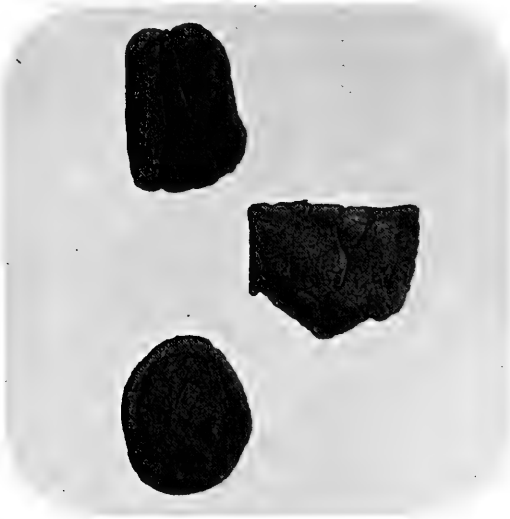


FIG. 130.—Photograph of three pellets of the dung of the Mylodon from the cave of Ultima Speranza.

offer some peculiar difficulties to explorers, for neither Sir Thomas Holditch nor Mr. Hesketh Pritchard, the latter of whom started for the purpose, succeeded in reaching it. It is stated that there are other caverns of a similar nature

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

in the neighbourhood. A great peculiarity about the occurrence of the remains of animals in this cavern is due to the fact that it has a dry sandy bottom. The bones are not embedded in



FIG. 131.—Photographs of the leg-bone (tibia) of Mylodon, from the cave of Ultima Speranza, to show the dried and cracked cartilage on the ends (articular surfaces) of the bones.

“stalagmite” as is the case in the bone-caves of England and France, and whilst they are quite unaltered and full of animal matter, the horny and tendinous parts of many of the animals, such as skin, hair, claws and hoofs, and

## WHEN WERE THE MYLODONS ALIVE?

the soft dung of the Mylodon, are preserved unchanged. It is quite certain that in any known cavern in Europe such remains would be destroyed in the course of fifty years by putrefactive bacteria, and were the conditions too dry for that process to continue, the remains would have been consumed by scavenger beetles and other insects within the like period. The climate of South Patagonia, where the cavern exists, is similar to that of Devonshire. It is a moist climate, although the cavern itself is not damp nor subject to inundation by streams. There is nothing in the sandy soil of a preservative nature, and it seems at first sight impossible to suppose that the soft dried remains, skin, claws, blood, etc., can be more than fifty years old. Yet the horses' hoofs and bones seem to belong to the extinct *Onohippidium*, and there is no record or tradition among the present race of Indians (in spite of some statements to the contrary) of any huge beast corresponding to the Mylodon. Altogether the case is a very puzzling one, and excites a very eager desire for further exploration. A noticeable fact bearing on the matter is that the whole of the southern part of South America has been submerged

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

rapidly and has rapidly risen again and is still rising at the rate of two feet a year in some parts, within the late Pleistocene period. Possibly the rocks and high lands where the *Mylyodon* cavern occurs formed an island during the submergence where a number of individuals of the earlier fauna took refuge and survived until the re-elevation of the land, and so lived on in the present condition of the land surface until fifty or a hundred years ago. Possibly, though by no means probably, the *Mylyodon* is still living in similar caverns in this region, as yet unvisited by man.

In Australia, the land of the marsupials or pouched mammals, the bones of gigantic creatures have been found belonging to that peculiar tribe. Giant kangaroos, twice as tall as any living kangaroos, are thus known. But there are also remains of some extraordinary animals, like wombats and koalas, only as big as the largest rhinoceros or a small elephant. One of these is the *Diprotodon* of Owen, known to him by its skull and the rest of the skeleton, excepting the feet. The skull is drawn in Fig. 132 with a human skull beside it to give a scale. In Fig. 133 is given Owen's restoration



## GIANT BEASTS FROM AUSTRALIA

of the complete skeleton with the exception of the feet. These have now been found by Dr. Stirling, of South Australia. A number of complete skeletons of this huge beast were found embedded in the mud of a great lake or morass.

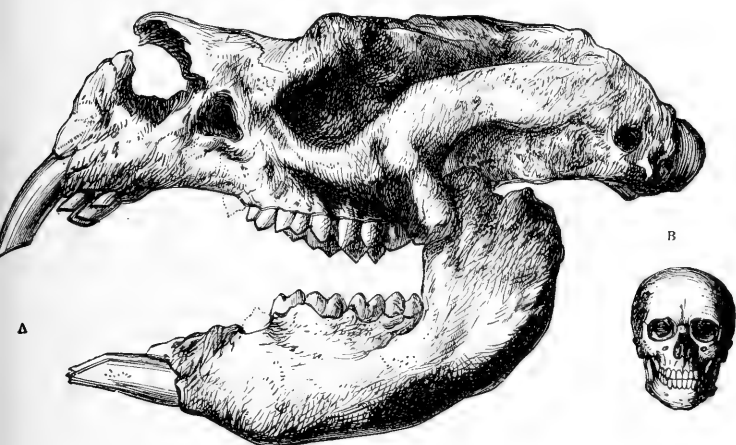


FIG. 132.—Drawing of the skull of the Giant Australian Marsupial, *Diprotodon*, preserved in the Natural History Museum. By its side is placed a drawing, to the same scale, of a human skull.

In the photograph (Fig. 134) the lake is shown, and one of the great skeletons is seen in the foreground. The bones were in a very friable state, but Dr. Stirling has succeeded in preserving them and has secured the complete feet. In Fig. 135 the right hind-foot is shown. It

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

is expected that the complete skeleton will be put together and exhibited in the Natural History Museum before very long.



FIG. 133.—The restoration of the skeleton of *Diprotodon*, as drawn by the late Sir Richard Owen. It will be observed that the feet were not known when this drawing was made.

The oldest remains of mammals, which we know of, are found in the Oolitic and Triassic strata and consist of very small lower jawbones with their teeth, embedded in very fine-textured

## AUSTRALIAN MONSTERS

rock. It is usually held, on account of the form of the angle of the jawbones, that they belonged to small marsupial mammals. They are very small, few of them as much as an inch in length, and one of them we have already seen in Fig.



FIG. 134.—Photograph of the morass or lake in South Australia in which the remains of several specimens of *Diprotodon* have been recently discovered. One of the skeletons is seen lying in the mud in the foreground.

57 enlarged to ten times its natural length. It is probably due to their density and hardness that the little jaw-bones have been embedded and preserved in these ancient rocks, whilst the rest of the skeleton is lost to us. The first

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

specimens of jaw-bones of this age were obtained seventy years ago in the Stonesfield Slate near Oxford by two undergraduates of the University, and it was at first supposed, on account of their occurring in such ancient rock as the Oolite



FIG. 135.—View of the upper surface of the right hind-foot of *Diprotodon*, as discovered by Professor Stirling of Adelaide, South Australia. The left-hand figure has the astragalus (ankle-bone) removed, whilst it is in place in the right-hand figure.

(see list of strata on page 60) that they must be jawbones of lizards. Soon, however, the fact was noticed that the teeth had double fangs, and it became clear from this, as well as the shape of the jaws and teeth, that they had

## MAMMALS OF THE MESOZOIC PERIOD

belonged to small mammals. In Fig. 136 two of these very ancient mammalian jaws are figured.

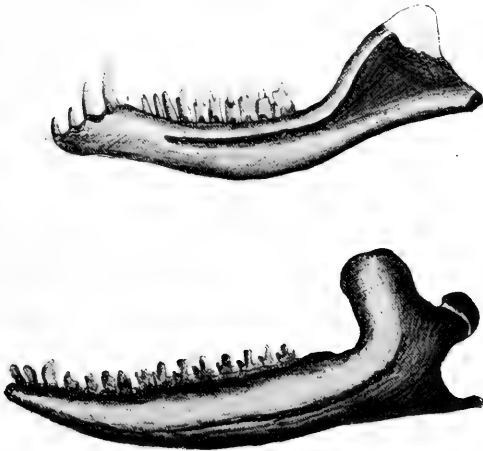


FIG. 136.—Lower jaws of the ancient Mammals, *Dromatherium* (upper—Trias), and *Dryolestes* (lower—Jurassic), magnified about  $2\frac{1}{2}$  times linear.

## CHAPTER V

THE GREAT EXTINCT REPTILES—DINOSAURS  
FROM THE OOLITES—THE PARIASAURUS  
AND INOSTRANSEVIA FROM THE TRIAS OF  
NORTH RUSSIA AND SOUTH AFRICA—MARINE  
REPTILES.

**I**N the next two chapters I propose briefly to bring before you a few examples of extinct reptiles, birds and fishes, and to take the very shortest glance at the host of invertebrate shell-fish, insects, star-fishes and such like extinct animals whose name is legion.

We will proceed at once to the reptiles. You will see from the list of groups of reptiles which I gave to you in a former chapter (p. 58) that there are four big orders or groups of living reptiles: (1) the Crocodiles; (2) the Tortoises (Chelonians); (3) the Lizards; and (4) the Snakes. The lizards and snakes are in their real structure so much alike that they are con-

## EXTINCT REPTILES

sidered as one double order. Extinct representatives of all these orders are found right away down through the Mesozoic strata to the Trias (see table of strata, p. 60). But there is nothing very astonishing about them excepting the large size of some of the extinct tortoises and snakes, and the fact that the older extinct crocodiles had the opening of the nose-passages into the mouth-openings, which we and all air-breathing vertebrates also possess, placed far forward as they are in the more primitive air-breathers, whereas living crocodiles have them pushed ever so far back to the very furthest recess of the long ferocious mouth, from which arrangement it results that the modern crocodile can have its mouth full holding the body of a victim under water whilst the air passes from the tip of its nose through the long nasal passage to the very back of its mouth and so to its lungs. This convenience was not enjoyed by primitive crocodiles.

The great interest in regard to extinct reptiles centres in those which were so entirely different from the reptiles of to-day that naturalists have to make separate orders for them. Many of them were of huge size. They flourished in the

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

Mesozoic period and abruptly died out; at any rate their remains disappear from the rocks at the close of the Chalk or Cretaceous period (see the table of strata, p. 60). These extinct orders of reptiles are the Dinosaurs, the Theromorphs, the Ichthyosaurs, the Plesiosaurs and the Pterodactyles. They are a prominent example of that kind of extinct animal which is not the forefather, so to speak, of living animals, but of which the whole race, the whole order, has passed away, leaving no descendants either changed or unchanged.

To begin with the Dinosaurs. They are a very varied group and mostly were of great size. They seem to have occupied in many ways the same sort of place on the earth's surface which was filled at a later period by the great mammals, such as elephants, rhinoceroses, giraffes, giant kangaroos, etc. Preying on the vegetable-feeding kinds there were huge carnivorous dinosaurs, representing the lions and tigers of to-day. Yet the mammals I have mentioned are in no way descended from these great reptiles. They came from another stock, and only superseded them on the face of the earth by a slow process of development, in which the



## THE NEW ZEALAND TUA-TARA

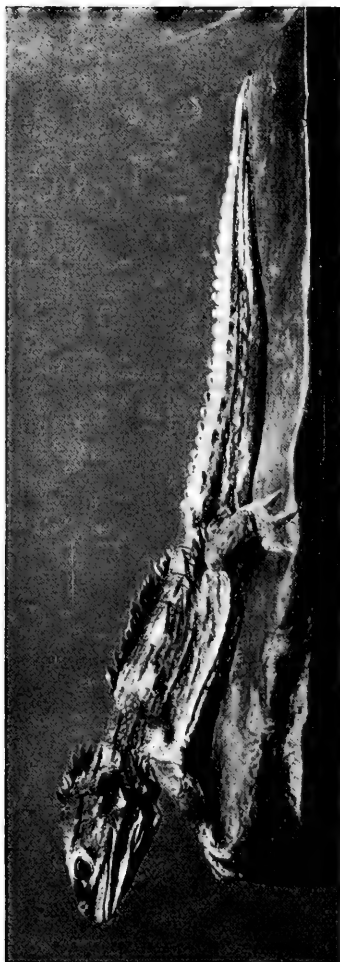


FIG. 137.—Photograph of a cast taken from life of the New Zealand Lizard *Tua-tara*, known as *Sphenodon punctatus*. The figure is one-third of the natural size.

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

great reptiles disappeared and the great mammals gradually appeared and took their place.

Some of the forms assumed by the great



FIG. 138.—*Phrynosoma orbiculare* (Mexican Horned Lizard or Horned Toad). Photographed one half the natural size.

Dinosaurian reptiles are not unlike the forms of the small scaly lizards of to-day (see Figs. 137, 138, 139, 140); but on the whole the Dinosaurs were more like mammals in shape, stand-

THE CHLAMYDOSAUR



FIG. 139.—*Chlamydosaurus kingi*, from Queensland, Australia. Photographed to one-third the natural size.

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

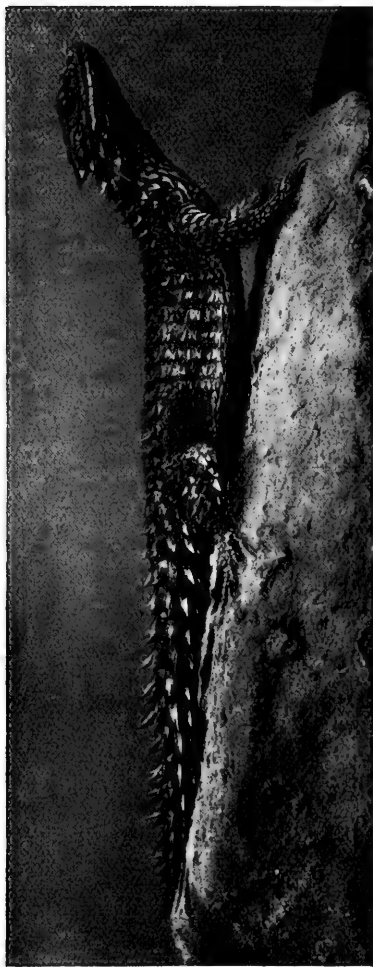


FIG. 140.—*Zonurus giganteus* (Great Girdled Lizard). Photographed half the size of nature.

## THE GREAT DINOSAURS

ing well up on the legs. We do not know much about their skin ; it was probably smooth and with only small horny scales on it, as in many living lizards, and often had great horns and crests growing out of it. But we know the

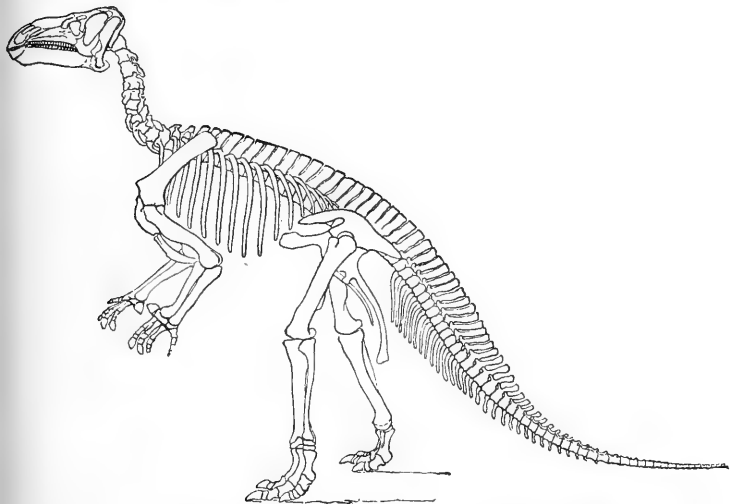


FIG. 141.—Drawing of the skeleton of *Iguanodon bernissartensis*. From the ground to the top of the head as the animal is posed, is about fourteen feet.

complete skeletons put together from bones chiselled out of the hard rock in which they are found, and we know that in important matters of shape and build the skeleton was different from that of living reptiles. The great size to which some of the Dinosauria attained is

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

shown by the thigh-bone of one found in the United States, and called *Atlantosaurus*—photo-



FIG. 142.—Probable appearance of the *Iguanodon* in its living condition.

graphed in Fig. 6, p. 11. This thigh-bone is one third as long again as that of the biggest elephant known.

## THE IGUANODON

In Fig. 141 is shown the complete skeleton of the Iguanodon. This great Dinosaur was one of the first to be discovered. As you see, it stood on its hind legs like a kangaroo, and in running occasionally went on those feet only, touching the ground now and then with its front feet. Footprints in slabs of sandstone, once soft wet sand, are found showing this. The animal stood about fourteen feet from the head to the ground in the position shown in the figure. Its thigh bone was only three feet long and it was therefore only half the size, in linear measurement, of the *Atlantosaurus*.

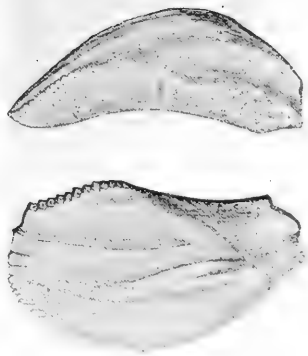


FIG. 143.—Two teeth of *Iguanodon mantelli* of the natural size, showing the serrated margin.

In Fig. 142 an attempt is made to show what the animal looked like when the skeleton was clothed with flesh and skin. The first bones and teeth of the Iguanodon were found seventy

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

years ago by a celebrated and most delightful collector and explorer of the earth's crust, Dr. Gideon Mantell, in the strata known as the Wealden in Sussex, just below the Chalk and Greensand (see table of strata). Dr. Mantell found that the teeth, of which two are here represented of the natural size, were those of a

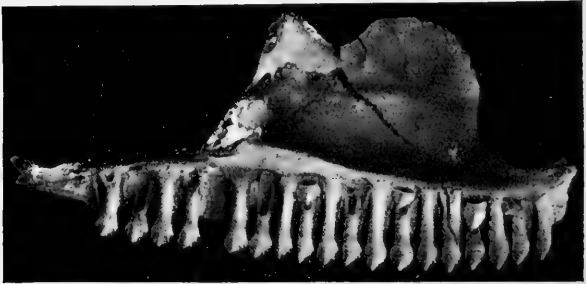


FIG. 144.—A portion of the upper jaw of the recent lizard Iguana, showing the serrated edges of the teeth, similar to those of Iguanodon.

herbivorous animal and like those of the little living lizard from South America, called the Iguana, in the fact that the broad chisel-like crown has a saw-like edge (Fig. 144). From this fact the name Iguanodon (Iguana-toothed) was given to the new fossil giant reptile. The bones found by Mantell and others were scattered and not in their natural position and the



## THE IGUANODON

form of the creature had to be guessed at by fitting this and that together. But some twenty-five years ago a wonderful find was made near Brussels in a coal-mine at a village called Bernissart. The skeletons of no less than twenty-two huge Iguanodons were found complete, and embedded in a fairly soft clay-like rock! The authorities of the Government Museum took charge of the place and most carefully removed the rock containing the skeletons to the Museum workshops at Brussels, where the complete skeletons of seven were, with enormous difficulty and care, removed bit by bit from the rock and set up as entire skeletons in the Brussels Museum, where they may be seen. A cast of one of these seven is in our own Natural History Museum. The photograph of the skull of one of these specimens is given in Fig. 145. It shows not only the teeth in position, but in front the bony supports of a great horny beak, like that of a turtle. As you may see in the drawing of the skeleton (Fig. 142), the forefeet (or hands) were provided with five fingers, of which the thumb had a huge claw on it at least a foot long. The foot was very much like that of a bird and had only three toes, and the bones

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

of the pelvis or hip-girdle are extraordinarily like those of a bird. In fact it is now certain that reptiles similar to the Iguanodon were the stock from which birds have been derived, the front limb having become probably first a

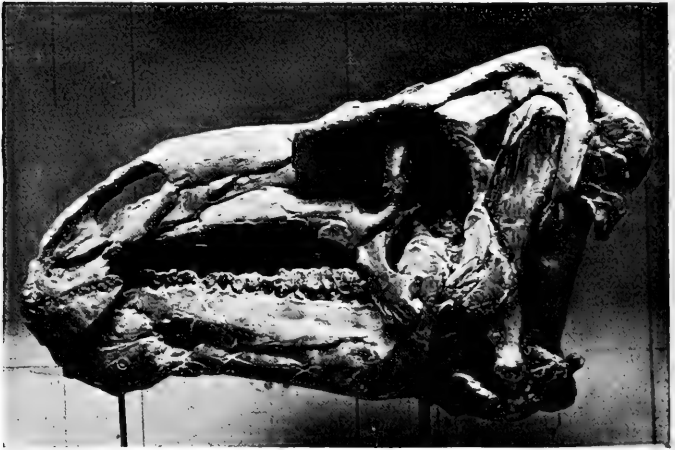


FIG. 145.—Photograph of the skull of an Iguanodon as dug out of the rock, showing the teeth of the lower jaw and the smooth bony supports for the horny beak of both upper and lower jaw. The specimen is three feet in length.

swimming flipper or paddle, and then later an organ for beating the air and raising the creature out of the water for a brief flight. From such a beginning came the feather-bearing wing of modern birds.

Fig. 146 shows the skeleton of a Dinosaur of

# THE MEGALOSAURUS

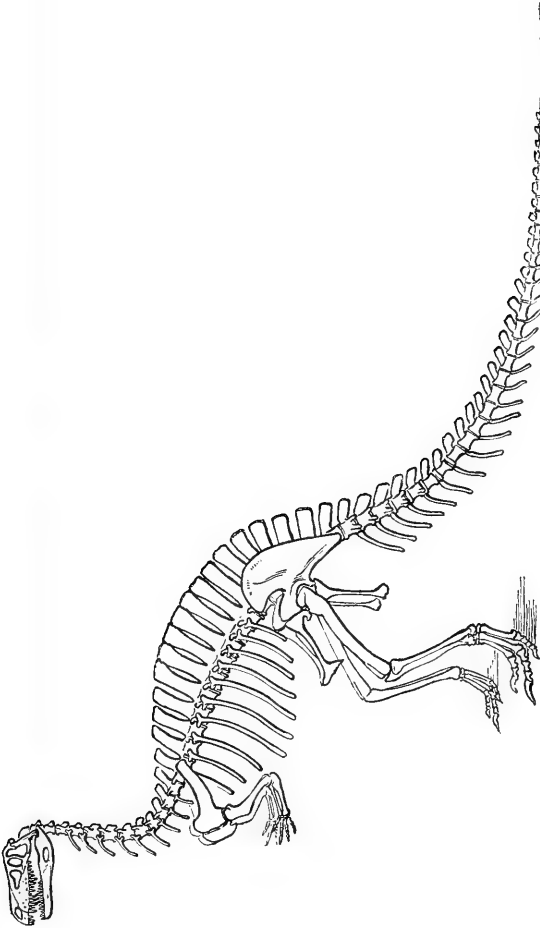


FIG. 146.—Drawing of the skeleton of a carnivorous Dinosaur, the *Megalosaurus*.  
The animal was about two-thirds the size of the *Iguanodon*.

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

somewhat less size but with the same kangaroo-like carriage, which was a beast of prey. It is the *Megalosaurus*, and had many tiger-like teeth in its jaws. It hunted down and fed upon the herbivorous Dinosaurs as lions and tigers hunt and eat antelopes and buffalo to-day. By no means all the Dinosaurs walked on their hind legs. There were enormous kinds which went on all fours. Here is the skeleton of the *Brontosaurus* (Fig. 147) and a sketch of its appearance in life (Fig. 148). The great *Ceteosaurus*, of which the limb bones and most of the skeleton were found near Oxford, is similar to this, and Mr. Andrew Carnegie has presented to the Natural History Museum a complete reconstruction of the skeleton of a closely allied Dinosaur—the *Diplodocus*—which was excavated in Wyoming and is now in the Carnegie Institute at Pittsburg. It is eighty feet long. Its head is very small, and a great part of the length is made up by the very long neck and the very long tail, but the body is bigger than that of the biggest elephant and the back was nearly fourteen feet from the ground.

The immense profusion in which the bones of these huge creatures have been found in

# THE BRONTOSAURUS

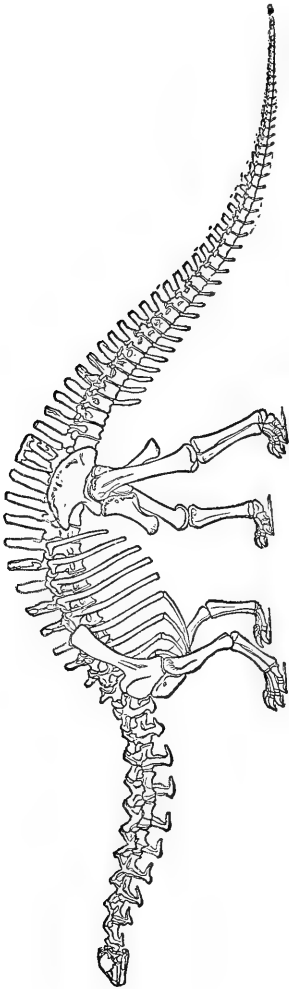


FIG. 147.—Drawing of a completely restored skeleton of the Brontosaurus. Note the extremely small size of the skull and the great length of the head and tail. A man could walk in front of the legs under the neck without stooping.

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

Mesozoic strata in the United States is astonishing ; no less remarkable is the skill and success with which American naturalists—chief among whom have been Professor Marsh of Yale and Professor Cope of Philadelphia—have collected,



FIG. 148.—Probable appearance of the *Cetiosaurus* (and of the closely similar *Diplodochus* and *Brontosaurus*) in life. It has been suggested that the animal walked along the sea or river bottom keeping its head just above water. Specimens of over sixty feet in length have been found.

fitted together and drawn every detail of more than thirty different kinds of these monsters. They have given such full evidence of the structure and build of the animals that we may with confidence accept the reconstructions of the appearance of the animals such as those

## THE TRICERATOPS



FIG. 149.—Drawing of the appearance in life of the three-horned Dinosaur, Triceratops (after a model issued by the American Museum of Natural History). This reptile was of the size of the largest living Rhinoceros.

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

shown in Figs. 149 and 150, where the rhinoceros-like Triceratops and the huge crested Stegosaurus are represented. Such crests and horns are bizarre and grotesque even when carried by little living lizards a few inches long,

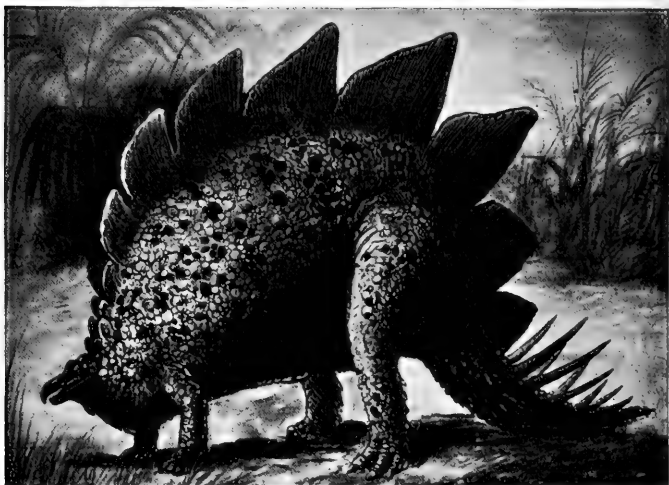


FIG. 150.—Probable appearance in life of the Jurassic Dinosaur Stegosaurus. The hind leg alone is twice as tall as a well-grown man.

but it must be remembered that the Dinosaurs drawn in Figs. 149 and 150 were as big in the body as large elephants.

A curious fact about these great Dinosaurs is that they had, as compared with big living reptiles such as the crocodiles, very tiny brains.



## THE BRAIN OF DINOSAURS

You will remember that the extinct mammals known as Titanotherium and Dinoceras have brains one-eighth the bulk of living mammals of the same size, such as rhinoceros and hippopotamus. So it was with the huge extinct reptiles. In some the head itself was ridiculously small according to our notions of customary proportion, and even in others, such as Triceratops, where the bony and muscular parts of the head were big, as in a rhinoceros, yet the brain was incredibly small. It could have been passed all along the spinal canal in which the spinal cord lies, and was in proportion to bulk of body a tenth the size of that of a crocodile. Very probably this small size of the brain of great extinct animals has to do with the fact of their ceasing to exist. Animals with bigger and ever increasing brains outdid them in the struggle for existence.

So much for the Dinosaurs, which might well occupy a complete course of lectures all to themselves. We will now turn to the Theromorphs, which are an older group even than the Dinosaurs and flourished in the Trias period (see table of strata, p. 60). The Theromorphs are so called because in some important

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

parts of the structure of skull and jaw, and often also in the teeth, they resemble the mammals or Theria. They come near to a point in the history of terrestrial vertebrate beasts which is the common origin of Reptiles, Mammals and Batrachia or Amphibians (newts, salamanders and frogs).

Their remains have been found in the Triassic sandstones and limestones of South Africa, of Russia, of India and of Scotland and the centre of England. One of the most striking of these is represented by a completely reconstructed skeleton from Cape Colony in the Natural History Museum, photographed in Fig. 151. The skeleton is some eight feet long and looks like a gigantic pug-dog. This is the *Pariasaurus*, and is shown by its small teeth to have been herbivorous.

From the same locality we have the *Dicynodon* with two huge tusks, and the *Cynognathus* with a skull and set of teeth wonderfully recalling those of a bear at first sight.

Another strange crested form belonging here is the *Dimetrodon* from the Permian strata of Texas, U.S.A. (Fig. 152).

But I am now able to show you, through the

## THE PARIASAURUS

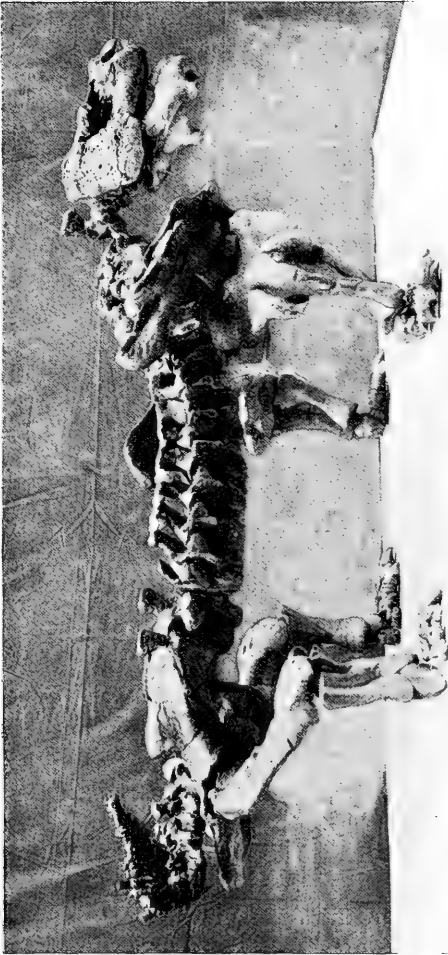


FIG. 151.—Photograph of the skeleton of *Pariasaurus*, as set up by Professor Seely in the Natural History Museum. Length from snout to tail, about eight feet.

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

kindness of Professor Amalitzky, of Warsaw, a set of photographs taken by him, showing the discovery and working out by him of a whole series of skeletons of these Theromorph reptiles, closely similar to those from the rocks of Cape

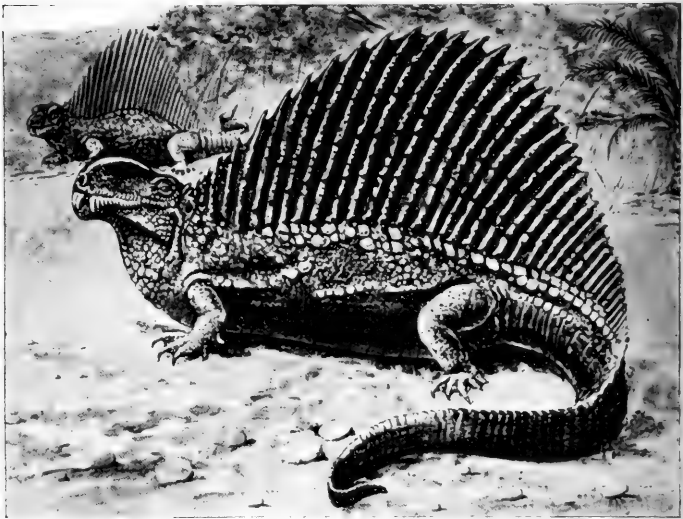


FIG. 152.—Probable appearance in life of the Theromorph Reptile, *Dimetrodon*, from the Permian of Texas. As big as a large dog.

Colony but belonging to a locality far removed from South Africa, namely, to the banks of the Northern Dwina near Archangel in North Russia. Professor Amalitzky has not yet finished his excavations nor published these

## THE BANKS OF THE DWINA

photographs, and it is therefore a great kindness on his part to allow me to show them here in London.

First of all, we have the cliff of Permian strata on the banks of the Dwina (Fig. 153), from



FIG. 153.—View of one of the dark patches in the cliffs of the river Dwina (the Northern of that name), where nodules containing the skeletons of extinct reptiles are found.

which and from another similar spot the remains were extracted. At this point, where the colour is dark in the photograph, there is a peculiar “pocket” or accumulation of sandy matter with large hard nodules embedded in it. These nodules are removed and broken up for mending

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

the roads. The pocket seems to be in a fissure and of Triassic age, later, that is to say, than the Permian rocks on each side of it. However that may be, the great nodules are removed from it for road mending, and four or five years ago Professor Amalitzky on visiting the spot was astounded and delighted to find that when broken each nodule was seen to contain the skeleton or skull of a great reptile. Fig. 154

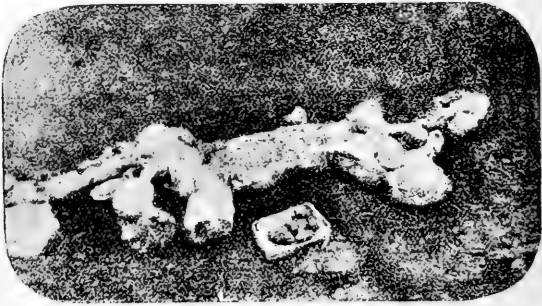


FIG. 154.—One of the nodules showing the form of the embedded skeleton, head to the right, tail to the left.

shows such a nodule, some eight feet long, and in this specimen one can easily distinguish the skull, the four limbs and the backbone of a large animal. The Russian geologist determined to make a most thorough investigation of this wonderful deposit, and for some years now has spent a thousand pounds a year, obtained for

## REPTILES FOUND IN NODULES

the purpose through the Imperial Academy of St. Petersburg, in having the nodules dug out by the peasants after their farming work is over for the year, and in removing them to the University of Warsaw, where with the finest



FIG. 155.—Peasants working on the face of the cliff near Archangel and removing nodules containing the skeletons of great reptiles.

instruments and greatest care the nodules are opened and each bone removed in fragments is put together from its more or less broken parts, firmly cemented and set up in its natural position and relations as part of a complete skeleton.

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

Fig. 155 shows the peasants at work, protected by a shed from the fall of stones from above. Fig. 156 shows some of the nodules as yet unopened lying in the laboratory of the geological professor at Warsaw. Fig. 157 shows a



FIG. 156.—Professor Amalitzky's work-shop in Warsaw, showing skeleton-holding nodules ready to be broken open and others already under preparation.

number of skeletons of the huge but harmless vegetarian *Pariasaurus* which have been cleared out of the nodules and set up on iron supports, as more or less complete specimens. Of course it is not possible in every individual to get out



## PARIASAURUS SKELETONS

all the bones complete, especially those of the feet. Few of the individuals were complete even when originally embedded in the mud ages ago. When an animal's body is carried away by a river and floats in a decomposing state it tends to fall to pieces.



FIG. 157.—A series of skeletons of *Pariasaurus* removed bit by bit from Archangel nodules and mounted as detached specimens by Professor Amalitzky.

The cliff formed by the present river Dwina consists of rocks of immense, indeed of almost inconceivable, age, and existed as solid rock ages and ages before the surface of the earth had its present form. These deep-lying rocks have been brought near to the surface by bending of

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

the strata (as shown in Fig. 36, p. 52), and the cutting or cliff made by the comparatively modern river exposes them to our view and to easy excavation. The nodules are relatively to the age of the river-valley or cutting (which is probably some 150,000 thousand

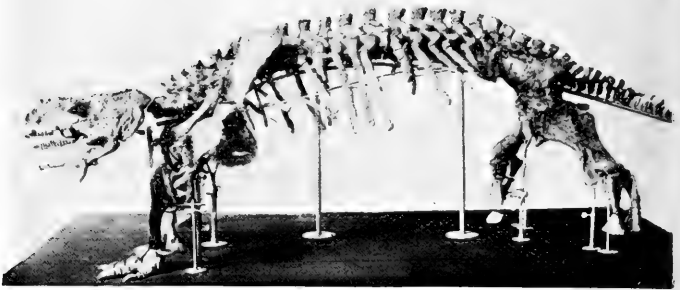


FIG. 158.—Photograph of a skeleton of *Pariasaurus*, removed from an enveloping nodule and mounted by Professor Amalitzky.

years old), as much older than it is as are Roman coins older than the trench dug three hours ago which brings them to light. If you look at the position of the Trias and Permian in the table of strata you will get some idea of how immensely remote is the time when these great reptiles lived where now is Arch-

## SPECIMENS OF PARIASAURUS

angel, for whilst the thickness of a twentieth of an inch suffices to indicate the accumulations of strata since the mammoth lived in England, the Trias is a long way down the series, far below the Eocene, where the ancestral elephants of Egypt are found, far below the Chalk, and



FIG. 159.—Photograph by Professor Amalitzky on a larger scale of a skull of a Pariasaurus from an Archangel nodule.

older than the long Jurassic series of rocks in which the remains of the great Dinosaurs we have recently looked at, occur.

In Fig. 158 one of Professor Amalitzky's specimens of Pariasaurus is shown. There is no artificial completing of this skeleton: all that is seen is actual bone as cleaned out of a

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

nodule. Only one foot is preserved, but that of course tells us as to its fellow of the opposite side. The skull of another specimen of *Pariasaurus* is shown in Fig. 159. It is very remarkable that this species seems to be so closely similar to the one discovered far away in South Africa in beds of the same age.

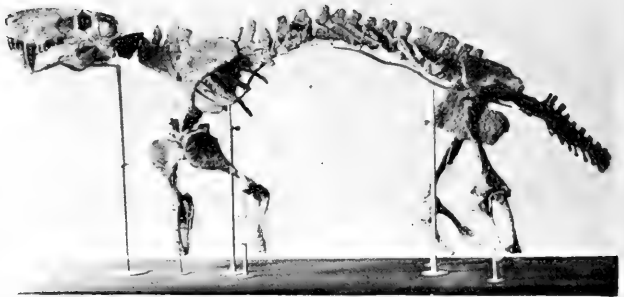


FIG. 160.—Skeleton of a huge carnivorous beast of prey--the reptile named *Inostransea*, discovered and photographed by Professor Amalitzky of Warsaw. The skull alone is two feet in length.

These *Pariasaurus* were about as big as well grown cattle, but not so high on the legs. In Fig. 160 we have the skeleton of another creature revealed by these nodules. It is an enormous and truly terrible carnivore, with a

## INOSTRANSEVIA, THE CARNIVOR

skull two feet long and enormous tiger-like teeth. This creature is named *Inostransevia* by Professor Amalitzky, and is larger than any of the carnivorous reptiles from South Africa. Specimens of its skull are shown in the Professor's photographs reproduced in Figs. 161 and 162.



FIG. 161.—Skull of the gigantic Theromorph Carnivorous Reptile, *Inostransevia* discovered by Professor Amalitzky in Northern Russia. It is allied to *Lycosaurus* found in Cape Colony in beds of the same age.

No doubt the vegetarian herds of *Pariasaurus*, whose small peg-like teeth indicate clearly enough their inoffensive habits, were preyed upon by the terrible *Inostransevia*, as were their brethren in South Africa devoured by the *Cynognathus*, the *Lycosaurus*, the *Cynodraco*

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

and other carnivorous reptiles of that remote Triassic age. So we see the co-existence of blood-sucker and victim—of the destructive oppressor and the helpless oppressed—forced on our attention in these two localities, Russia and

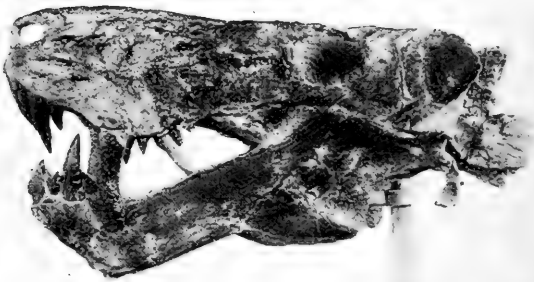


FIG. 162.—Photograph of another skull of *Inostransea*.

South Africa, when we study the immensely remote past of the Triassic age.

We leave now these great extinct land-dwelling reptiles and take a glance at representatives of two extinct orders of huge aquatic creatures which must also be classified as reptiles. These are the Plesiosauria and the Ichthyosauria. Though some of them must have measured thirty feet from snout to tail, they do not equal

## PLESIOSAURS

in size the great aquatic mammals of to-day, the whales.

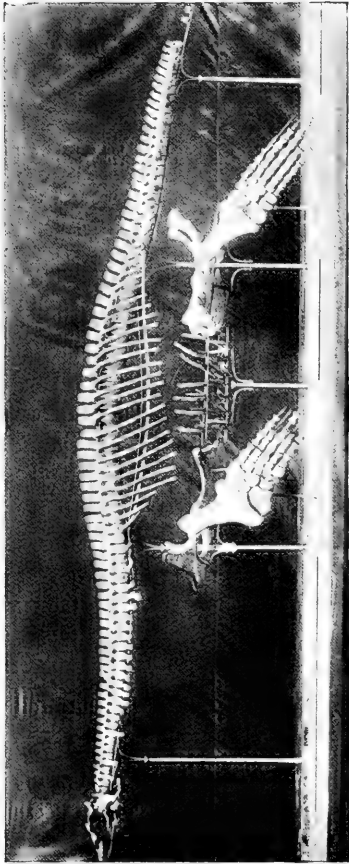


FIG. 163.—Photograph of a Plesiosaur removed by Mr. Alfred N. Leeds from the clay (of Jurassic age) near Peterborough, and set up bone by bone in a nearly complete state in the Natural History Museum.

In Fig. 163 is shown the photograph of the skeleton of a large Plesiosaur, and in Fig. 164

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

is given a drawing showing how the creature appeared in life. It had a body like the hull of a submarine with four paddles attached, the fore- and the hind-legs. It had a long neck like that of a swan and an elongated head pro-



FIG. 164.—Plesiosaurus as it probably appeared when alive, swimming near the surface of the water with its back showing and its neck and head raised above the surface.

vided with powerful jaws armed with numerous pointed teeth. It probably could swim under water as well as on the surface, and when in the latter position could snap small lizards and birds from the land. The paddles have the definite structure of legs, with five toes, wrist or ankle



## ICHTHYOSAURS

and fore-arm or fore-leg and upper arm or thigh. A great number of kinds of these Plesiosaurs have been discovered, especially in the Lias rocks of the South of England, slabs containing whole skeletons being frequently obtained. They and the similarly embedded and flattened skeletons of different kinds of



FIG. 165.—Photograph of a skeleton of the large-paddled Ichthyosaurus preserved in Liassic rock.

Ichthyosauria may be seen in quantity on the walls of the gallery of fossil reptiles in the Natural History Museum.

In Fig. 165 the flattened skeleton of an Ichthyosaurus is photographed. This particular species is remarkable for the great size of its fore-paddles.

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

In Fig. 166 a drawing of an Ichthyosaurus, as it must have appeared in life, is given. The Ichthyosaurs are much more fish-like or rather whale-like in form than the Plesiosaurs. They were indeed singularly like the porpoises and

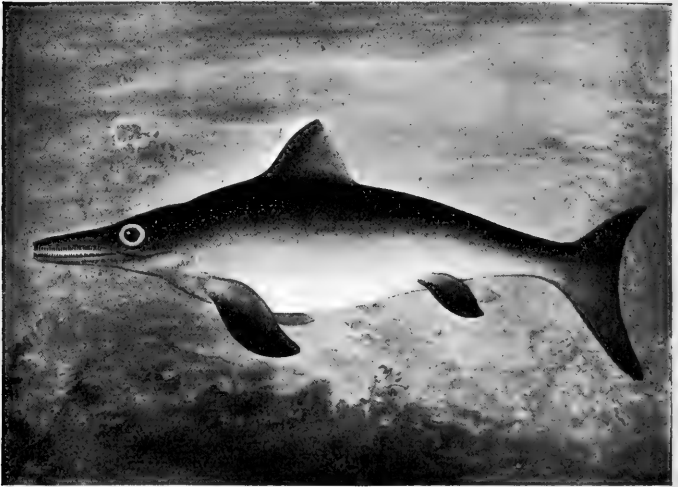


FIG. 166.—Drawing to show the probable appearance of an Ichthyosaurus swimming beneath the surface of the sea.

grampuses among living whales and stand in the same relation to land-living reptiles that the porpoises do to land-living mammals. Their fish-like appearance and fins are not primitive characters and do not indicate any closer blood-relationship to fishes than that possessed by

## ICHTHYOSAURS

other reptiles. They are the offspring of four-legged terrestrial reptiles which have become specially modified and adapted to submarine life. Like many whales they had a median fin on the back devoid of bony support. The bones of their legs have become greatly changed, much more so than those of the Plesiosaurs and form often more than five rows of nearly circular or polygonal plates fitted together as a flexible paddle. The tail is fish-like, but has the lower lobe bigger than the upper and the vertebral column bends down into the *lower* lobe instead of turning up into the *upper* lobe as it does in fish. The details as to the fins are known from some wonderfully preserved specimens found in the fine hardened mud known as the lithographic slate of Solenhofen, where the soft bodies of jelly-fish, cuttle-fishes and the wings of flying reptiles also are preserved.

As mentioned in the first chapter, the Ichthyosauria (see Fig. 2) had a ring of bony plates supporting the eye-ball (as birds also have), and these are often preserved in the fossil specimens. In Fig. 168 a view of the top of the skull of an Ichthyosaurus is given in order to show the round hole in the middle line of

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

the brain-case (on a level with the letter P). This is called the "parietal foramen," and is a fair-sized hole in which was lodged an eye, a

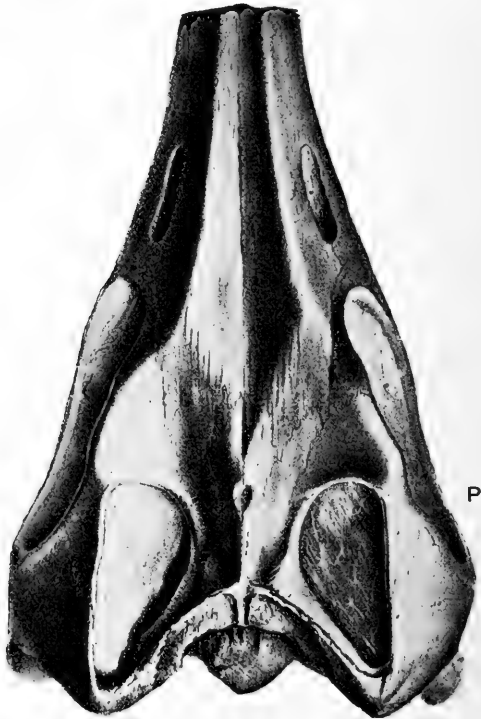


FIG. 167.—Photograph of the upper surface of the skull of an Ichthyosaurus. On a level with the letter P in the middle of the skull is seen an oval pit, the "parietal foramen" in which was lodged the "third" or "pineal" eye.

third eye called the pineal eye. This eye is found in some other reptiles also, and especially

## ICHTHYOSAURS AND COPROLITES

in some of the living lizards where its structure has been studied with the microscope. There is no doubt that the body filling this hole in living lizards is an eye, although it seems to have lost the power of sight in these recent forms. A third eye, placed on the top of the head strikes one as a very strange arrangement and contrary to all our common experience of vertebrate animals.

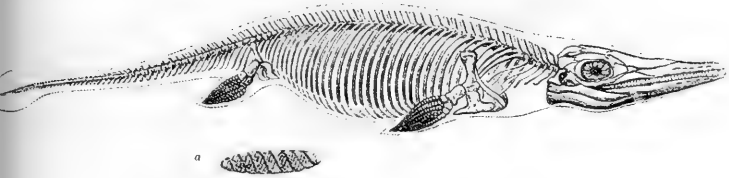


FIG. 168.—Side view of the skeleton of an Ichthyosaurus. Below the skeleton is drawn a “coprolite” showing spiral grooving on its surface.

In Fig. 168 we have a drawing of the side view of the skeleton of an Ichthyosaurus and below it a fossilized lump of its excrement. These are called coprolites and consist of scales and bones of fishes digested by the Ichthyosaurus. They show a corkscrew-like moulding of the surface, proving that the intestine of the

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

Ichthyosaurus had a spiral fold like a spiral staircase on the walls of the intestine, as have



FIG. 169.—Photograph of a restoration of the skeleton of the great Pterodactyle (*Pteranodon*). The stretch of the wings from tip to tip measures eighteen feet. From a preparation in the Natural History Museum. The bones of the arms, shoulder girdle and fingers are the actual bones; the skull, neck, body and hind legs being drawn from other specimens of the same species.

the sharks. We also find within well preserved specimens of the skeletons of Ichthyosaurus the

## PTERODACTYLES

skeletons of unborn young individuals, showing that the Ichthyosaurus brought forth its young alive.

We pass on now to even more astonishing reptiles—the extinct order of the pterodactyles or flying reptiles of the Mesozoic period. These



FIG. 170.—The great Pterodactyle *Pteranodon* as it appeared in flight.

creatures were as truly aërial as the birds and bats of to-day. They were of many kinds, from the size of a crow to so huge a form as that drawn in Fig. 169, which measured eighteen feet from the tip of one wing to the tip of the other. Their wings have been found well

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

preserved in the Lithographic slates (see Fig. 31, p. 47), and each consisted of a membrane spread from one enormously big elongated finger to the side of the body and little hind legs.

Fig. 170 gives some idea of the form and appearance of the wings when expanded. Such a wing is more like that of a bat than that of a bird, since it is a membranous skin and not a series of feathers. The bat's wing is a membrane supported by three of the fingers as well as the side of the body and hind leg.

In Fig. 171 the fossil wing of a Pterodactyle, that of a recent bird with the bones and the great quill-feathers only in place (the smaller feathers having been plucked off), and the wing of a bat are photographed and placed together for comparison. There are two other kinds of flying animals, namely, the flying fishes (which do not fly far), and the six-legged insects or flies, bees and beetles. They have all independently acquired the habit of flying and have had certain parts of their bodies changed into wings. The process of change must have been gradual and have taken an enormous lapse of time to bring it about in each kind. There are



## WINGS COMPARED

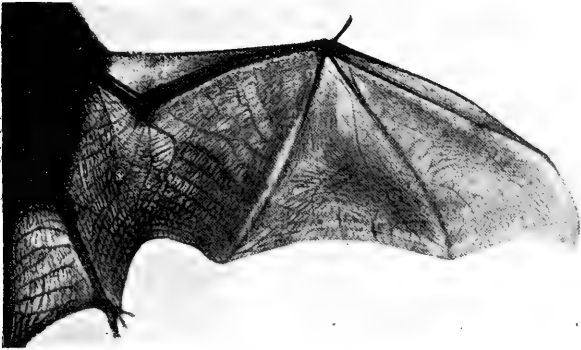
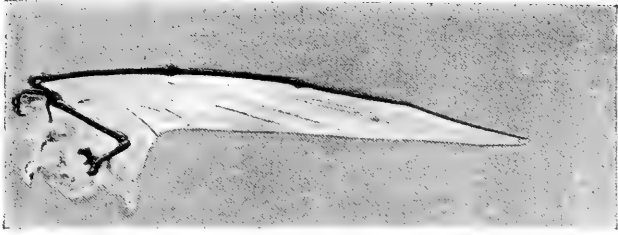


FIG. 171.—Photographs of three wings for comparison of their structure. *A.* That of a Pterodactyle, membrane supported by one long finger. *B.* That of a Bird, feathers set on the fore-arm (*cubitus*) and hand. *C.* That of a Bat, membrane supported by three elongated fingers.

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

some animals, such as the flying squirrels and flying lizards (*Draco volans*) of to-day, which do not really fly, since they have no wings to beat the air with, but can spread out a great flat surface on each side of the body which enables them to sail through the air for some distance without falling when they jump from the branch of a tree. This, however, is a long way from the point reached by animals which have wings and can strike the air as a fish strikes the water with its fins. Probably the wings of birds and of insects were both derived from fin-like organs which were used to swim with—before they were used in the air. But the origin of the wing of the Pterodactyles, and independently that of the wing of the bats, does not seem to have been of this nature, and is one of the many very puzzling matters which further discoveries may one day enable us to understand.

In Fig. 172 two other kinds of Pterodactyle are shown. Some Pterodactyles had no teeth, but long beak-like jaws (Fig. 169). Others had numerous sharp-pointed teeth and were beasts of prey.

It seems natural to pass from the winged

## PTERODACTYLES

reptiles to birds: But as a matter of fact the birds are not very closely related to Pterodac-



FIG. 172.—Probable appearance in life of two kinds of Jurassic Pterodactyles (*Dimorphodon* and *Rhamphorhynchus*).

tyles. Birds are, it seems, derived from reptiles, and are very specialized, warm-blooded descendants of certain reptiles. They are so

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

peculiar that they are considered as a distinct "class," and the reptiles which come nearest to them in structure are the Dinosaurs, especially those Dinosaurs (like *Iguanodon*) which walked on their hind-legs and had only three toes to the foot. Fossil remains of birds are not abundant—but a few very interesting birds have been found in the Lower Eocene and in the Cretaceous rocks (see list of strata, p. 60), and one more remarkable than any other in the Lithographic slates of Jurassic age. Modern birds have all got feathers and beaks, and, with one or two rare exceptions, the quill feathers are set on the fore-arm and hand so as to form the wing. No living bird has teeth, but fossil birds are known with well developed teeth like those of reptiles. In Fig. 173 is shown the drawing of the skeleton of an extinct bird, which had a full set of teeth. The most remarkable extinct bird as yet discovered is that shown in Fig. 174. Two specimens of it have been obtained from the Lithographic slates of Solenhofen in Bavaria. The first one found is preserved in the Natural History Museum; the second and more perfect is in Berlin. This bird—called *Archæopteryx*—was of the size of

## TOOTHED BIRDS

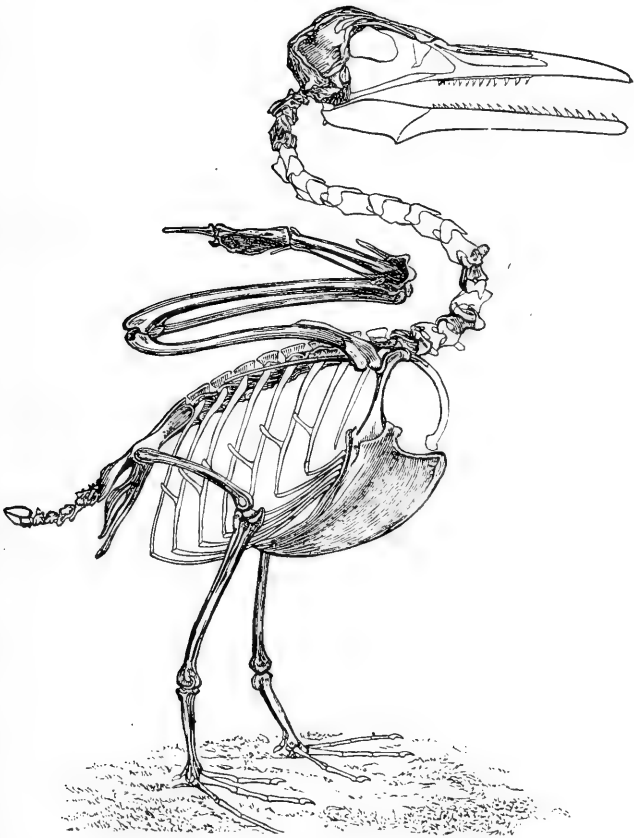


FIG. 173.—Restored skeleton of the toothed Bird, *Ichthyornis*  
—of the size of a pigeon—from the Chalk of Kansas,  
U.S.A.

a large pigeon, had a short head apparently without a beak, and its jaws were armed with teeth. Whereas living birds have the fingers

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

of the hand aborted and tied together, this bird had three distinct fingers, each armed with a claw. Its legs were like those of living birds,



FIG. 174.—The Berlin specimen of the *Archæopteryx siemensii*, showing the wings with three fingers, the long tail, the head and neck and the feathers of the wings and tail.

and it had four toes. Its tail was unlike that of any living bird, and like that of a lizard. Whereas the bony part of the tail of living birds is very short and bears the tail feathers set

## THE ARCHÆOPTERYX

across it fan-wise, the Archæopteryx had a long bony tail made up of many vertebræ, and the feathers were set in a series one behind the other on each side of it, so that the tail resembled the leaf of a date palm in shape. Strange as this little creature appears, it was a genuine bird, for it had true feathers well developed, which are clearly shown in the two fossil specimens. Besides the two rows of feathers on the long tail, there are the full set of feathers spreading from the fore-arms and hands to form the wings, and the thighs also were covered with feathers.

It cannot be said that this ancient extinct bird goes far towards connecting birds with reptiles: but in the possession of separate claw-bearing fingers, a long bony tail and teeth, in the apparent want of a beak, it does come nearer to lizard-like reptiles than does any other known bird.

In the Tertiary Strata remains of various birds have been found. One of great interest on account of its enormous size is the Phororachus of South America. We have in Fig. 175 a photograph of the skull of this bird placed beside the stuffed skin of a living South American

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

bird, the *Cariama* or Screamer. If the extinct bird had the general proportions and habits of the *Cariama*, as seems probable, it must have been a terrible monster, standing some twelve feet high and far exceeding the most powerful eagles and vultures in strength and the size of

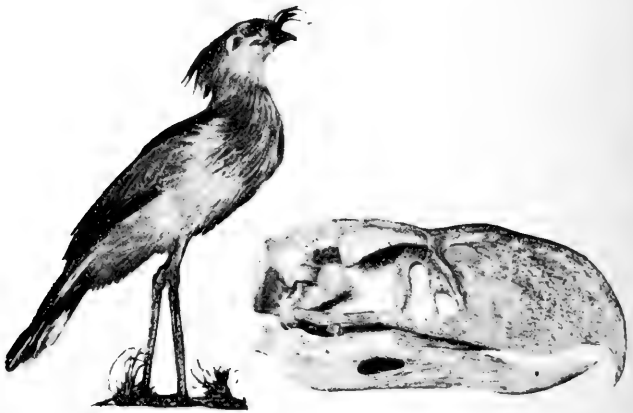


FIG. 175.—Photographs to one scale of the South American *Cariama* and the skull of the gigantic extinct *Phororachus*.

its beak and claws. Great extinct wingless birds are found in quite recent “alluvial” deposits in New Zealand and in Madagascar. The discovery of the bones of the great Moa of New Zealand has already been mentioned in our second chapter (p. 69). Many species of Moa have been found in New Zealand. The



## WINGLESS BIRDS

Moa is allied to the ostriches of Africa, the emeus and cassowaries of Australia, and the rheas of South America.

It appears that under certain conditions of life birds may gradually lose the use of their wings, which dwindle in size and finally may disappear altogether. Such wingless birds are not necessarily of one stock. The wingless condition, or the great reduction in the size of the wings, has occurred in various kinds of birds at various periods of the earth's history, and in the same way wingless insects of different orders have come into existence. In New Zealand, besides the Moas, which are all now extinct, a small kind of wingless bird is found which is still alive and is known as the Apteryx or Kiwi. In Fig. 176 we have placed one behind the other each with its egg in front of it: a Kiwi, the skeleton of a very fine Ostrich, and the skeleton of a giant Moa (*Dinornis maximus*). The Polynesian islanders who landed in New Zealand some five hundred years ago, found the Moas still living, and hunted them down and lived upon their flesh. Skin and feathers of these enormous birds have been found preserved in a dried condition as well as the skeletons, and there are

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

traditions as to the hunting of the Moa still in existence. The Moa of Madagascar seems to

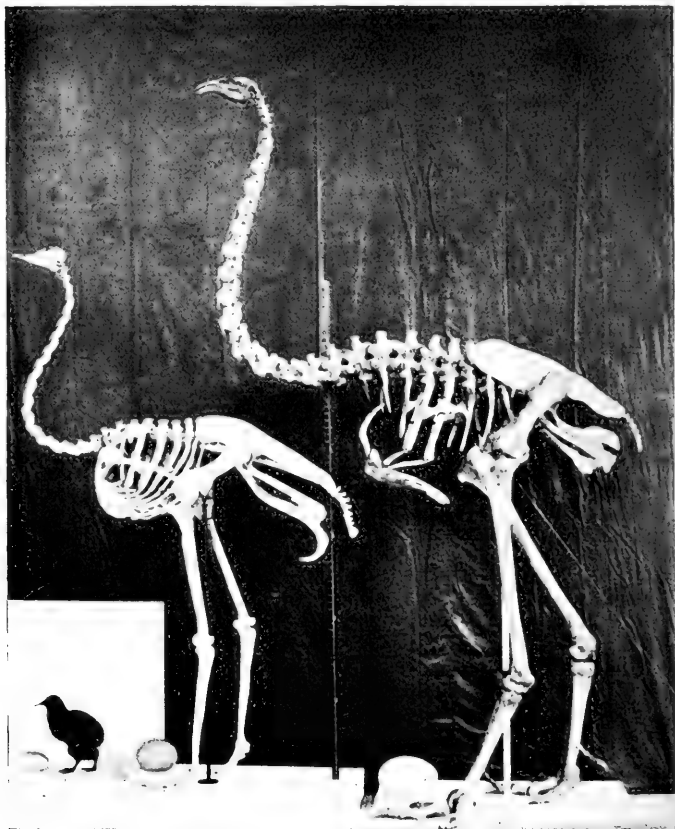


FIG. 176.—Photographs to one scale of the Apteryx, the Ostrich and the giant Moa of New Zealand, each with its egg.

have been a smaller bird, but laid a proportionately much larger egg. It will be seen in Fig.

## FLIGHTLESS BIRDS

176 that the eggs of the Ostrich and of the *Dinornis* are not nearly so big in proportion to the size of the bird as is that of the *Apteryx*, which lays a truly gigantic egg considering the size of its body. The Moa of Madagascar is known as the *Æpyornis* and laid the biggest egg known—much bigger than that of the biggest New Zealand Moa—resembling the *Apteryx* in the proportionate sizes of its egg and its body. It was this very large egg which inflamed the imagination of ancient navigators and led to the vast exaggeration, which thrills the reader with wonder and terror, in the accounts of the “roc” given by Sinbad the Sailor in the *Arabian Nights*.

Flightless birds necessarily, unless they are, like the penguins, great swimmers, must get destroyed and become extinct when man arrives on the scene. The dodo, of which I spoke in my first lecture (p. 26), was a close ally of the pigeons, but had lost its power of flight owing to the fact that it had no dangerous enemies in the island of Mauritius. It had become a heavy, slow running, though powerful ground bird. As soon as man arrived, and with him the pig, the flightless dodo was doomed to

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

extinction. An extinct water-bird, the Hesperornis, had no wings whatever, whilst the penguins use their wings as swimming organs and are unable to fly. This was also the case with the gare-fowl or great auk (Fig. 15, p. 23), which has recently become extinct.

## CHAPTER VI

EXTINCT FISHES — BELEMNITES — LINGULA —  
TRILOBITES—SCORPIONS AND STONE LILIES

**W**E might, if we had time, now look at the remains of the great bony Labyrinthodonts—creatures allied to the newts, salamanders and frogs of to-day, which form the class Amphibia. They stand lower than the Reptiles, Birds and Mammals; and though they have typically five toes and crawl or walk the earth, yet are essentially aquatic animals, inasmuch as their young are “tadpoles,” fish-like in form and provided with gills. No reptile, bird or mammal has hitherto been found in what are called the Palæozoic strata, but in the Upper Palæozoic strata—those of the Carboniferous system, the period of the coal-bearing strata (see Table of Strata)—there was an immense

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

variety of "Amphibia," some of very large size—as large as a well-grown crocodile.

It seems as though we might describe the Carboniferous as the period of the predominance of Amphibia, just as the Jurassic is that of the predominance of Reptiles and the Tertiary that of the predominance of Mammals.

The Labyrinthodonts, though of great interest to the trained anatomist, do not present many striking forms; the most noticeable were of the size and shape of large alligators. Accordingly, in the short space that remains to us, I propose to pass by the Labyrinthodonts and go on to the fishes, and bring to your notice some of the strange fishes, the remains of which are dug up in very ancient strata, as far back even as the Upper Silurian and the Devonian rocks. I shall then have space to mention a few of the more extraordinary extinct animals of the lower kinds, strange shell-fish, star-fishes and scorpions of the remote past.

The silver-scaled fish which are so abundant at the present day, with their symmetrical tails, such as herring, salmon, carp, roach, perch and other modern fishes more curious in form, such as eels, flat-fishes, sticklebacks, pipe-fishes

## GANOID FISH-SCALES

and parrot-fish, are all of comparatively recent origin. They are not found in the rocks older than the Cretaceous system. On the other hand, the sharks and dog-fish of to-day are the most ancient kind of fish known to us, remains of shark-like fishes occurring in Silurian strata. But the sharks have soft cartilaginous skeletons, and have only, as a rule, left teeth and spines

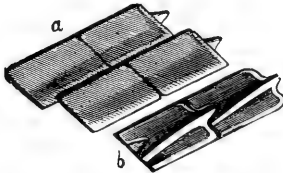


FIG. 177.—The hard bony scales of a Ganoid Fish. (a) Four scales as fitted together on the surface of the fish's body ; (b) two scales turned over to show the ridge by which they lock into one another.

and the denticles of the skin (shagreen) in the rocks.

On the other hand there are certain fishes known which have hard bony scales and often great plates of bone on the head. They are often called "Ganoid fishes" on account of their hard smooth bony scales (see Fig. 177), which differ in substance and shape from the thin, flexible scales of common fish. They

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

were very abundant in Mesozoic and Palæozoic times, and have left their hard scales in a very perfect state in the ancient rocks of those periods. They had often unequally divided triangular tail-fins, and in internal structure were like the sharks rather than the modern bony fishes. Very few of these Ganoid fish survive to the present day, but a fine one, the *Polypterus* (Fig. 178), still lives in the Nile and other African rivers, and another, the bony pike or *Lepidosteus*, in the North American lakes. The sturgeon also belongs to this set of fishes. In the Devonian is found, together with many others, a beautifully preserved fish, the *Osteolepis* (Fig. 180), which had lobed fins and hard bony scales like the *Polypterus* of the Nile. Allied to these Ganoid fishes, but differing in the fact that they possess lungs as well as gills and have very peculiar lobate fins, are the so-called mudfish of Africa (*Protopterus*) and of South America (*Lepidosiren*). A third mudfish is found in the rivers of Queensland, Australia, and is now living in the Zoological Gardens in London. It is called *Ceratodus* (Fig. 181), and is obviously related to some very ancient extinct fishes, of whose race it is a last



# THE POLYPTERUS OF THE NILE

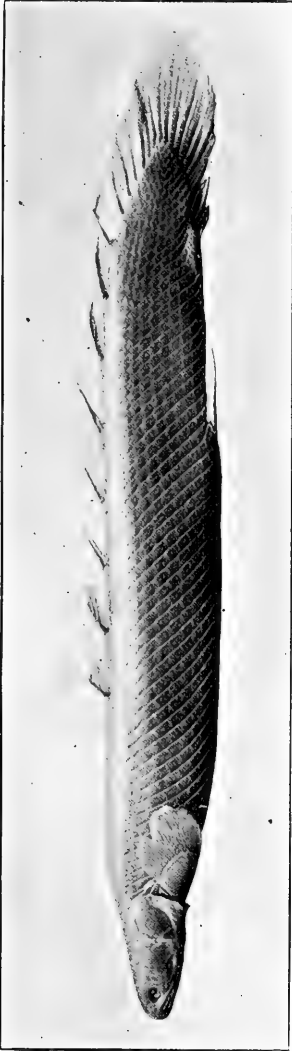


FIG. 178.—Photograph of a dried skin of the Polypterus of the Nile, one-third the natural size, linear. It shows the hard rhombic scales, the lobed pectoral fins, the much divided dorsal fin and the peculiar tail.

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

survivor. One of these ancient forebears of the *Ceratodus* is found fossil in the Devonian or Old Red Sandstone of Scotland and of

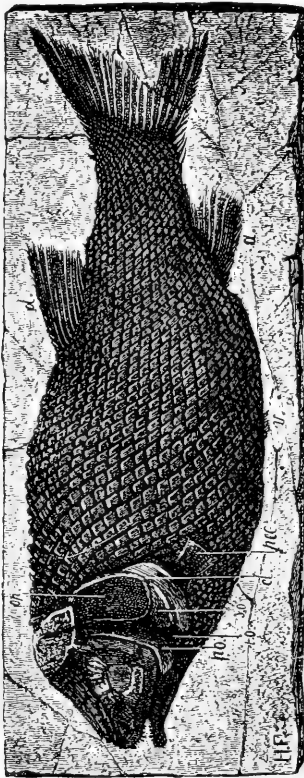


Fig. 179.—A fossil Ganoid Fish, as discovered embedded in rock. The fish is *Lepidotus hebertensis*, and is from the Upper Lias of Würtemberg. Observe the closely set angular bony scales and the unequally divided tail. (After Gaudry.) (Lent by the Trustees of the British Museum.)

Russia. It is known as *Dipterus*, and is shown in Fig. 182. It differs from *Ceratodus* in having strong bony scales (whence its preservation as

## THE OSTEOLEPIS

a fossil) and a triangular tail-fin. The true

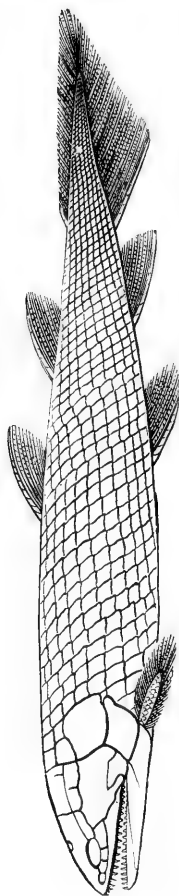


FIG. 180.—Outline drawing of the extinct Ganoid Fish Osteolepis, found in the Old Red Sandstone rocks (Devonian) of Scotland. Note the median lobe of the anterior lateral (or pectoral) fins.

tail-fin has disappeared altogether in the living mud-fishes. Dipterus has peculiar teeth\ just

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

like those of *Ceratodus*, and its fins are similar in character to those of the latter.

In the Devonian strata are found also the

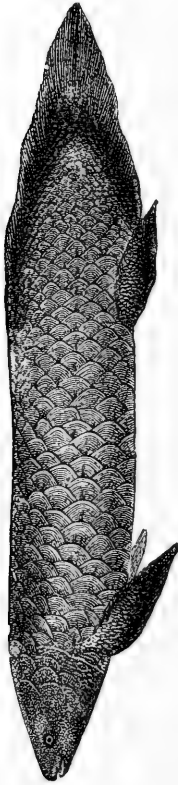


FIG. 181.—The Australian lung-fish *Ceratodus*. It grows to a length of two feet and breathes air by its lung as well as water by its gills. (Figure lent by the Trustees of the British Museum.)

extraordinary fishes known as *Pterichthys*. They were compared by the wonderful Scotch quarryman, Hugh Miller—who seventy years ago

## THE DIPTERUS

discovered them and cleaned out many specimens from the rocks of his native hills at Cro-

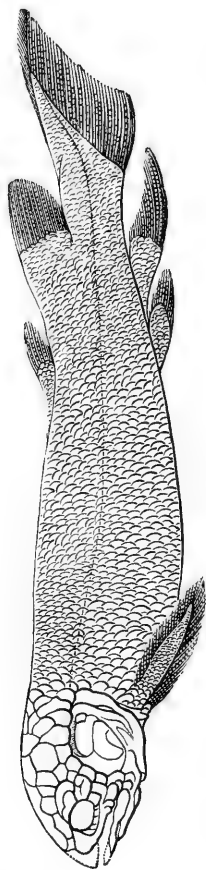


FIG. 182.—The extinct Devonian Fish, *Dipterus*, found in Scotland and in Russia. It was in many respects like *Ceratodus*, but has a more fully developed tail fin and other separate median fins. (Figure lent by the Trustees of the British Museum.)

marty in Scotland—to a tortoise's shield with a fish thrust into it. We have now gained from

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

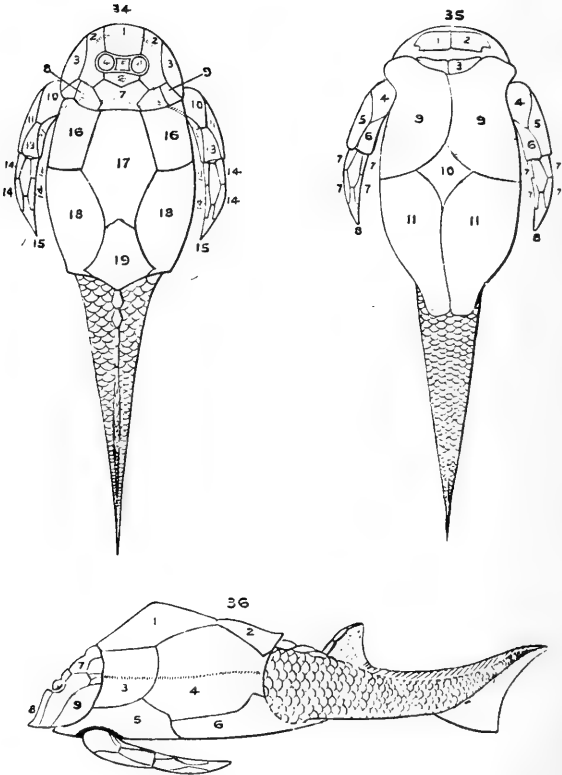


FIG. 183.—Outline drawing of the extinct fish *Pterichthys* from the Devonian or Old Red Sandstone strata. A dorsal (34), ventral (35) and lateral view (36) are given. The various bony plates are numbered. The scaly body with dorsal fin and tail fin is shown. Note also the lateral leg-like anterior fins. The round orbits (4) are seen in Fig. 34 and the mouth in 35 between the plates 2 and 3. (After Traquair.)

the examination of a great number of specimens from Canada as well as Scotland a very detailed

## THE STRANGE FISH, PTERICHTHYS

knowledge of the curious bony plates which build up the case or "carapace" of the body



FIG. 184.—Photograph of a cardboard model of *Pterichthys* made by Hugh Miller, the celebrated stone-mason and naturalist of Cromarty, preserved in the Natural History Museum.

of *Pterichthys* (Fig. 183), and also of its soft scaly tail, and the two extraordinary paddles

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

or limbs which represent the anterior or breast fins of a common fish. Hugh Miller puzzled this out with great skill and constructed a cardboard model of the fish which we have still preserved in the Natural History Museum. It will, I think, be interesting to those who have read the writings of Hugh Miller (*The Testimony of the Rocks, My Schools and Schoolmasters*, and other books) to see a photograph of the model of Pterichthys which he made with his own hands (Fig. 184).

In the same rocks with Pterichthys occurs another very curious fish, the Coccosteus. This and Pterichthys were of small size only, about a foot long, but in Ohio in the United States the lower jaws and skulls of huge fishes allied to Coccosteus have been found, which must have been ten or twelve feet in length. The lower jaw of one of these (called Dinichthys), together with a restored outline of Coccosteus is shown in Fig. 185.

Very strange and curious fishes (only a few inches long) are found in still older strata—in the oldest Devonian and the Upper Silurian. One of these is called the buckler-head or Cephalaspis (Fig. 186). Its head is of the shape



## COCCOSTEUS AND DINICHTHYS

of a saddler's knife and the two eyes are placed near the centre. Another fish is known almost solely by the shields which covered the head or head and body, one above and the other below.

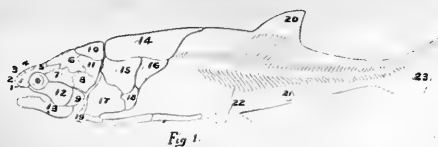


FIG. 185.—The upper figure is a restored outline of the curious Devonian fish, *Coccosteus*. It is about a foot and a half long. The lower figure is a photograph to the same scale of the lower jaw of a huge fish allied to *Coccosteus* found in the Devonian rocks of Ohio in the United States of America. It is called *Dinichthys*, and must have been from ten to twelve feet long. The above jaw and nearly complete skulls are in the Natural History Museum.

This is the *Pteraspis* (Fig. 187). The head or head-and-body shields of these fishes and those of *Cephalaspis* are found in immense numbers in the hard gritty "cornstones" of Worcester-

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

shire and Herefordshire, also in Scotland. The stone is quarried for road mending, and great quantities of specimens have been found, though no other fossils occur with these fish-heads. It used to be imagined that this rock was the deposit of a great fresh-water lake, but that is not likely, since *Pteraspis* heads are found with marine shells in the rocks of Galicia. The curious thing is that although occasionally a

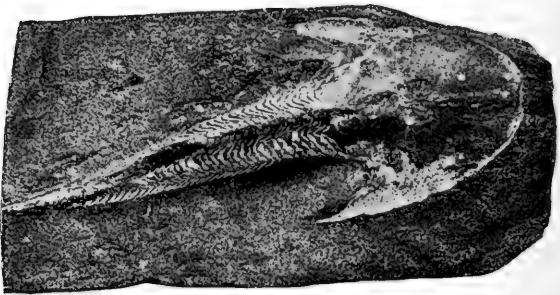


FIG. 186.—Photograph from the original specimen of *Cephalaspis lyelli*, preserved in the Natural History Museum, one-third the natural size, showing the saddler's-knife-shaped head and the scale-bearing body.

tail or body of *Cephalaspis* covered with scales and provided with fins has been found attached to a head-shield, as in Fig. 186, yet the body or tail of *Pteraspis* remains unknown. The only specimen showing any trace of the hinder

## THE SCALES OF PTERASPIS

region of Pteraspis is one which I obtained when I was a boy (in 1864) at a quarry in Herefordshire, the workmen from whom I got it saying it was a fossilized fir-cone. As a

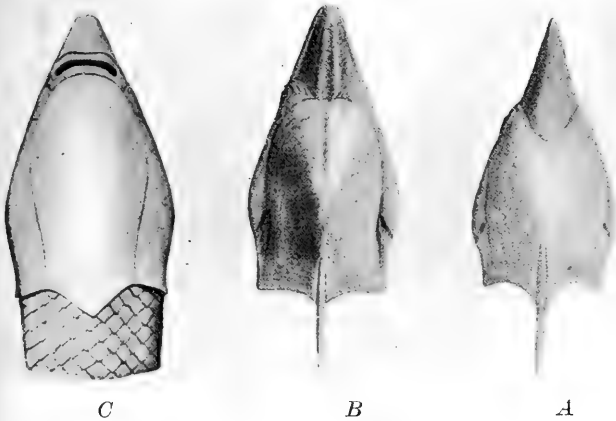


FIG. 187.—Drawings of the head-shield of the fossil fish Pteraspis. *A* is the species *Pteraspis crouchii*. *B* is *Pteraspis rostratus*. *C* shows a view of the under surface of the fish's head, which was protected by a peculiar oval plate (called Scaphaspis, when it was supposed to represent an independent kind of fish). The probable position of the mouth in front of the oval shield is shown. (Original.)

little concession to my vanity, I have had this solitary specimen, which I gave long ago to the British Museum, photographed of the natural size (Fig. 188). It is not much to look at, but it is one of the most interesting specimens I

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

have myself had the pleasure of unearthing. The strange thing is that it is and remains unique.

Fig. 189 is a photograph of the upper and



FIG. 188.—Photograph (of the natural size) of a specimen showing parts of the upper and lower head-shields of *Pteraspis crouchii*, with ten rows of lozenge-shaped scales attached. This is the only specimen showing the scales of *Pteraspis*, and was obtained by the author at Cradley, near West Malvern, Herefordshire, in 1864, and subsequently presented by him to the British Museum.

under side of a model of the *Drepanaspis*, a most strange fossil fish of the same early age, allied to *Pteraspis*. It is prepared from the

## THE DREPANASPIS

drawings of Professor Traquair, who has described the fish. Specimens of it in a crushed state preserved in the slate-rock of North Germany are in the Natural History Museum.

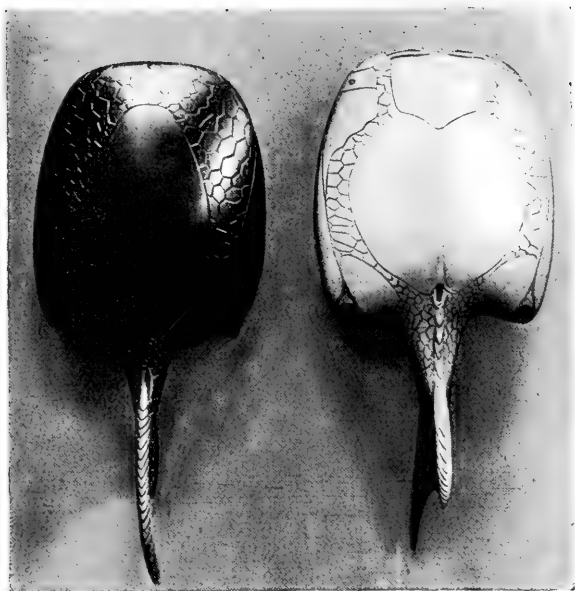


FIG. 189.—Photographs of models of the Devonian Fish Drepanaspis, in the Natural History Museum, prepared after the drawings of Dr. Traquair. (Original.)

Fishes resembling this in shape have recently been found in the Silurian strata of Lanarkshire, and they, together with the curious little fishes drawn in Figs. 190, 191, are

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

the oldest remains of fishes which have been discovered. These last two—*Birkenia* and *Lasanius* (Figs. 190, 191)—are very puzzling

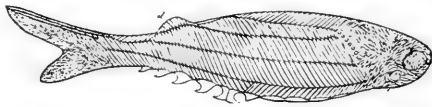


FIG. 190.—Outline drawing of the Silurian fish *Birkenia* from Scotland, described by Dr. Traquair.

little creatures, with spines set in a row along the belly. It is difficult to make out back from belly or to distinguish eyes or mouth, yet they show characteristic fish tails and a scaly cover-

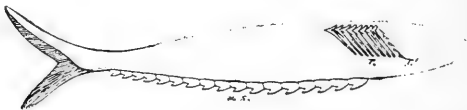


FIG. 191.—Outline drawing of *Lasanius*, another genus of fish similar to that drawn in Fig. 190, and from the same locality, described by Dr. Traquair.

ing of the body. These are among the most recent discoveries and come from the Upper Silurian strata of Scotland. Specimens of these are in the Natural History Museum, but the finest series are in the Edinburgh Museum, where Professor Traquair has made a special study of the most ancient fish remains, the

## VAST EXTENT OF ANCIENT STRATA

most ancient vertebrate remains, yet disinterred from the crust of the earth.

Ancient, inconceivably ancient, as are these Upper Silurian rocks, there are yet immense thicknesses below them of stratified rock, containing fossils in which no fish remains have been discovered. We must not conclude that the very curious-looking fishes of the Upper Silurian are really the actual forefathers of all later fish and of all vertebrate life. They just happen to be preserved and dug up, but probably soft-bodied fishes existed then and before that time which had no bones inside and no hard scales outside, and so have left no sign, in the rocks, of their existence. The Upper Silurian strata are, as you will see by looking at the Table of Strata on p. 60, just halfway down in the thicknesses of rocks, between the present river gravels above and the Cambrian beds with the oldest known fossils (certain Trilobites) below.

We will revert to the Trilobites directly; but before leaving the extinct fishes I wish to mention the great fossil sharks of the late Tertiaries (Miocene and Pliocene). These we know by their teeth; enormous shark's teeth are found which are three times the length of the teeth

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

of the biggest living sharks on record, as shown in Fig. 192. These teeth are found in beautiful preservation in Malta, in the Antwerp

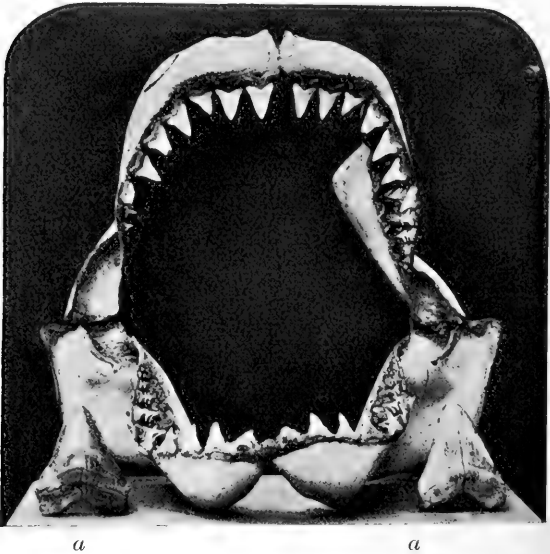


FIG. 192.—Photograph of the jaws of a large recent Shark (*Carcharodon rondeletii*), the largest specimen of the kind in the Natural History Museum. At *a, a*, right and left, is placed a single tooth of the great extinct Miocene shark for comparison. The space between the upper and lower jaw is two feet. The fossil teeth are six inches in length, and the largest in the jaw are two inches in length.

sands, in Maryland, U.S.A., and in Suffolk in England. In Suffolk they occur in the same wonderful bone-bed of the Red and Coralline Crag (see Fig. 192A), from which we get the





192A.—Photograph of the natural size of a tooth of the great shark, *Carcharodon megalodon*, from the bone-bed of the Red Crag of Felixstowe, Suffolk. The specimen is in the author's cabinet. It is three times the length of the largest living shark's tooth, and the fish which bore it was probably 100 feet in length. A kind of sandstone is seen adhering to a part of the surface of the tooth, which shows that this tooth (like many others found in the Red Crag) had been embedded in an earlier sandy deposit (the Diestien sands) before it was washed into the Red Crag.

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

teeth of mastodon, rhinoceros and tapir. It seems to be a correct conclusion that this huge shark (*Carcharodon megalodon*) was nearly one hundred feet in length, since its teeth were fully three times the length of an almost identical recent shark (*Carcharias rondeletii*), which measures thirty feet in length.

“Extinct animals” include, as must be obvious at once, a vast number of smaller creatures besides the vertebrate Fishes, Amphibians, Reptiles, Birds and Mammals. Rocks occur containing thousands, even millions, of shells of Molluscs (whelks, bivalves, etc.) crowded together in a space of a few feet. Remains of minute shrimps are equally abundant, and whole mountains are built up of rock formed by the coral or calcareous skeleton of minute polyps resembling our sea-anemone. Many of these are very peculiar forms, unlike those now living. Others, again, are remarkable for the fact that though found in the most ancient rocks they yet closely resemble creatures still living to-day.

We will now glance at a few of the more remarkable “fossils” of these lower or simpler kinds. (See the table of classes on p. 56.)

## THE AMMONITES

In the Jurassic strata and in the Greensand and Chalk wonderful coiled shells are very

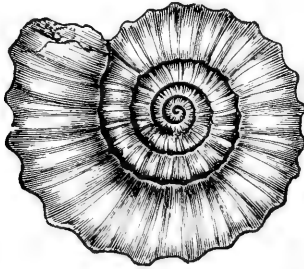


FIG. 193.—Ammonites (*Aegoceras capricornus*) from the Lower Lias of England.

commonly found which have been compared by the country-folk to petrified snakes and to

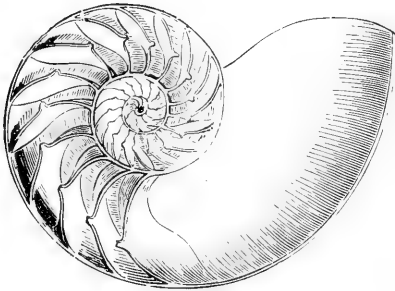


FIG. 193A.—The shell of the Pearly Nautilus, cut in half so as to show the air chambers in the coils of the shell. (Lent by the Trustees of the British Museum.)

the coiled horns of the ram. These are the so-called Ammonites (Fig. 193), of which there

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

are a great number of different kinds, some as big as five feet in diameter. When cut across they are seen to be divided into a number of chambers internally. In fact, their structure is the same as that of the beautiful shells of the Pearly Nautilus (Fig. 193A), which to-day lives in the Indian and Pacific oceans. The chambers in the shell of the pearly nautilus contain gas

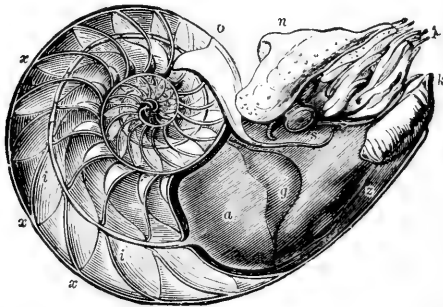


FIG. 194.—The divided shell of the Pearly Nautilus, with the animal in place in the large front chamber. (Lent by the Trustees of the British Museum.)

and act as a float, whilst the animal lives in the last chamber (Fig. 194). There are only some three or four species of pearly nautilus now living, and they represent a vast variety of extinct creatures which comprise not only the Ammonites but the more ancient Goniatites. Some of these extinct allies of nautilus, such as

## ALLIES OF AMMONITES

the *Orthoceras*, were not coiled but quite straight; others were loosely coiled, as is the *Ancyloceras*

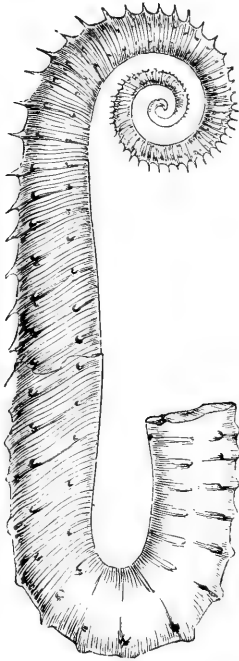


FIG. 195.—The shell of *Ancyloceras matheronianum*, from the Neocomian (Lower Cretaceous) rocks of France. (Lent by the Trustees of the British Museum.) A similar shell is found in the Lower Greensand of the Isle of Wight.

shown in Fig. 195, and others were twisted into elongated spires (*Turrilites*).

The creature which lived in these shells was similar to a cuttle-fish (as we know from ex-

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

amination of the animal of Nautilus), and belonged to the class Cephalopoda of the great group Mollusca. The Molluscs include, besides these, the whelks, snails, mussels, clams and oysters.

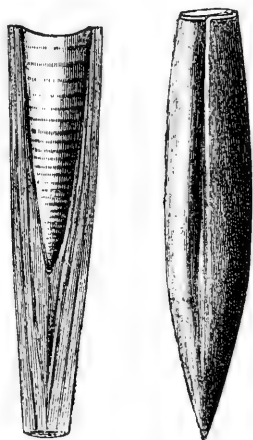


FIG. 196.—*Belemnites hastatus* from the Oxford Clay (Jurassic). The left-hand figure represents a specimen cut in half and shows the conical cavity or phragmacone (rudimentary chambered shell). The right-hand figure is the “thunder-bolt” as usually found.

A celebrated fossil which is the internal shell or “pen” of a kind of cuttle-fish is that known by the name “Belemnite” (Fig. 196). These fossils are called “thunder-bolts” in some parts of England, where they are sufficiently common in the clay and shale to attract attention. They

## THE BELEMNITE'S CUTTLE FISH.

are found only in the Jurassic and Cretaceous formations. In fine clay specimens occur showing the soft parts of the sort of cuttle-fish in which they were formed (see Fig. 197). They

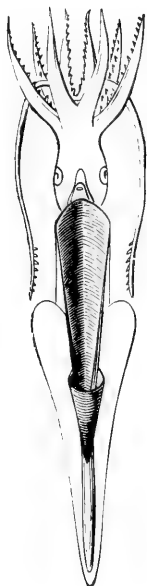


FIG. 197.—Restored drawing of the animal in which the “Belemnite” is formed. The dense pencil-like piece lies embedded near the hinder end. (From a drawing by Sir Richard Owen.)

are of the same character as the “cuttle-bone” of the living cuttle-fish and the pen of the squid (Fig. 198), but are more solid and heavy.

The oldest fossils which are known are found

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

in the Lower Cambrian rocks (see Table of Strata, p. 60), and are the remains of small marine creatures, which were, however, by no means very simple in structure. One of these is the *Lingula davisii* (Fig. 199), from the Lingula

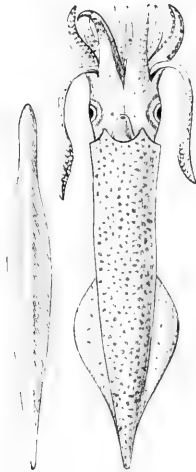


FIG. 198.—*Loligo media*, a cuttle-fish or squid now living in British seas. On the left is seen the long horny "pen," which, like the Belemnite, is embedded in the animal's back. (Lent by the Trustees of the British Museum.)

flags of Wales. Only the simple oval shells are known, but they are almost exactly like the shells of a marine animal which is still found living in immense numbers on the shores of the warmer oceans. The living owners of these shells occur in great numbers burrowing in sand and



## THE OLDEST FOSSILS OF ALL

have a very highly complex structure and red-coloured blood. It is indeed a most remarkable fact that the remote fossil shells of the lower

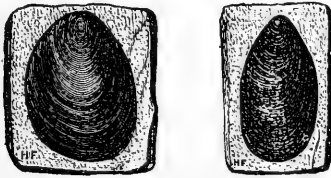


FIG. 199.—*Lingula (Lingulella) davisii*, of the natural size, embedded in the slaty rock of Port Madoc, North Wales.

Cambrian strata should be identical with those of a living animal of a high rank in the scale of structure. Not only is that the case, but in all



FIG. 200.—One of the most ancient Trilobites known (*Conocoryphe lyellii*), from the Lower Cambrian of Nun's Well, Wales. From a drawing by Professor Gaudry. This Trilobite is also called Conocephalites.

the deposits above the Cambrian we find the shells of *Lingula*, so that we must conclude that *Lingula* has been existing in the seas of

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

this earth, with very little change in form, ever since the Lower Cambrian times.

Another class of fossils which are equally ancient are the Trilobites (Fig. 200). These are well-marked forms with ringed or jointed bodies divided very often into three longitudinal lobes; hence the old name Trilobites. An immense number of different kinds of Trilobites are known and classified, but they ceased to exist in the Permian period (see Table of Strata, p. 60). For a long time the legs of these creatures were unknown; they have only been found within the last ten years. Mr. Beecher, of the United States, discovered them in one particular kind—the *Triarthrus becki* (Fig. 201). Some people consider these animals to be allied to the woodlice or other crustacean shrimp-like forms now living. But it seems most probable that they were a primitive marine group allied to the scorpions, spiders and king-crabs (the Arachnida).

It is a fact of very great significance that the earliest fossils yet discovered are the remains of very highly developed animals, by no means near the beginning of animal life. It is indeed a reasonable supposition that the earliest forms of animal life must have preceded the Cambrian

# THE LEGS OF TRILOBITES

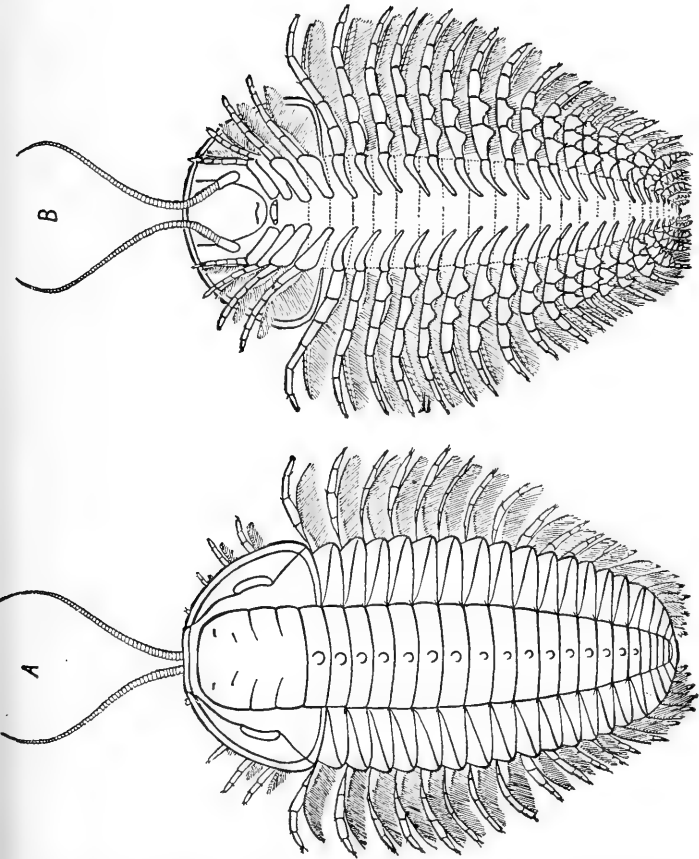


FIG. 201.—Drawing of *Triarthrus becki*, a Trilobite from the Silurian rocks (Ordovician) of New York, of which the legs and antennæ are well preserved, although no other Trilobite has been found showing these parts. (Lent by Macmillan & Co.)

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

Trilobites and Lingula by as long a period as these latter precede the animals living to-day. Apparently the soft-bodied animals which preceded the Cambrian fossils have not left any remains in the rocks below the Cambrian or their remains have been destroyed by chemical and

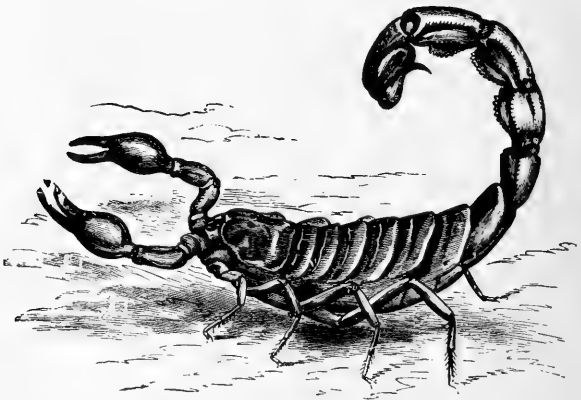


FIG. 202.—The Desert Scorpion (*Buthus australis*). Drawn from a living specimen in the author's laboratory.

structural change in those most ancient deposits.

The Scorpion itself (Fig. 202) is a very ancient and important animal which so far impressed the imagination of even the earliest civilized men, that they named one of the constellations after it. Some hundreds of distinct species of scorpions are known as living at the present day

## EXTINCT SCORPIONS

in various parts of the world. In the Carboniferous strata we find fossil scorpions hardly differing at all from those now alive, and even in the Upper Silurian we find a scorpion (Fig. 203), which would be recognized at once by a child

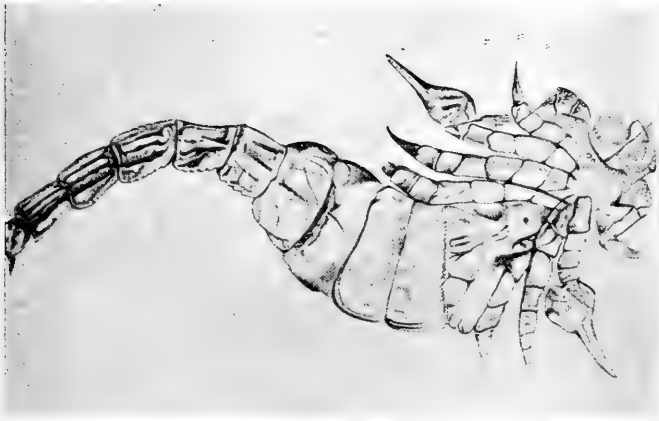


FIG. 203.—Drawing of the remains of a Scorpion (*Palaeophonus hunteri*) from the Upper Silurian of Lesmahago, Scotland.

as being a true scorpion. It, however, seems probable that whilst modern scorpions are terrestrial, and breathe air by means of lung-sacs, the Silurian scorpion was aquatic. This is indicated by its thick crab-like legs with strong pointed end-joints (Figs. 204 and 205).

Besides the Silurian scorpion of undoubted

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

affinity to modern scorpions, we find in the Silurian and Devonian rocks remains of enormous aquatic scorpion-like creatures, sometimes

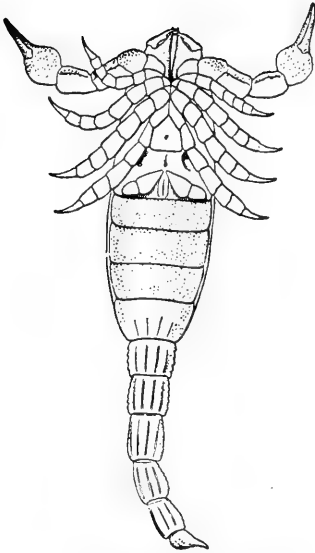


FIG. 204.—Completed drawing of the Scotch Silurian Scorpion (*Palæophonus hunteri*), seen from below, so as to show the attachments of the legs.

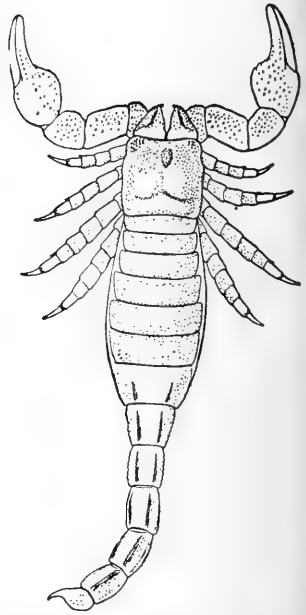


FIG. 205.—Completed drawing of the Silurian Scorpion of Gothland (*Palæophonus nuncius*), seen from above.

four or five feet in length (Figs. 207, 208, 209). These are known as the Eurypterids (*Pterygotus*, *Stylonurus*, *Eurypterus*, etc.). They had

## THE EURYPTERIDS

six legs like the scorpion, of which the anterior carried nippers in some instances. The great

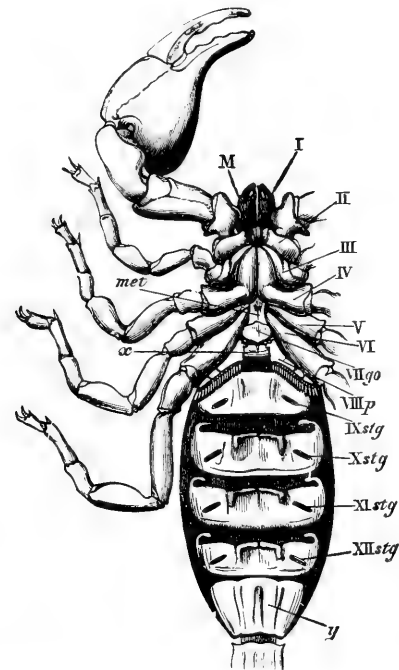


FIG. 206.—View of the anterior part of a recent Scorpion from below, so as to show the attachments of the limbs, the genital plate (VII *go*), the combs (VIII *p*), and the lung-mouths (IX *stg* to XII *stg*). Note also the claws at the ends of the walking legs.

spine at the end of the body is the representative of the scorpion's sting, whilst they agree with scorpions in the position and character of

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

the eyes and in the number of segments or rings which build up the body and the head.

A very interesting animal which is still alive (but is also found in ancient rocks) connects the

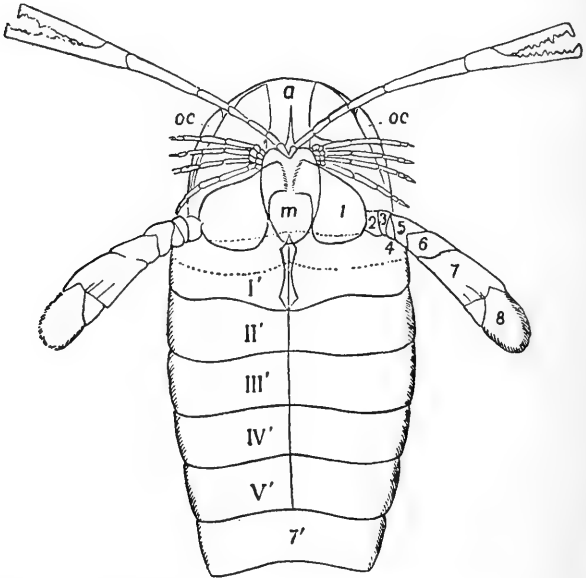


FIG. 207.—View from below of the anterior part of the great Silurian Scorpion-like creature, *Pterygotus osiliensis* (From Zittel's *Palaeontology*, lent by Messrs. Macmillan.)

scorpions with the great extinct Eurypterids and also with the Trilobites. This is the King-crab (Figs. 210, 211, 212), which is not a true crab—that is to say, a member of the class



## THE KING CRAB

Crustacea—but is a sort of marine scorpion with shortened tail (though having a long sting-like spine at the end of its body)—a

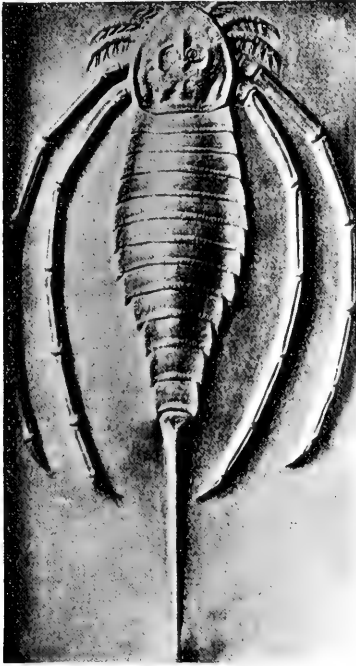


FIG. 208.—Photograph of a restored model of *Stylonurus lacoanus*, from the Upper Devonian of Pennsylvania, U.S.A. Original about five feet in length. By Professor C. E. Becher.

member of the class Arachnida. Its legs, six in number (Fig. 212), are singularly like those of the scorpion, and in a great number of minute

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

details it agrees with scorpions (see Fig. 213)

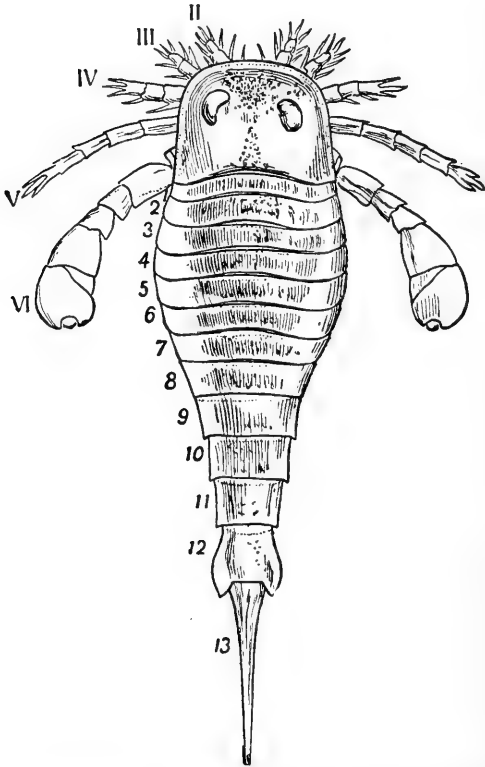


FIG. 209.—*Eurypterus fischeri*, a marine Scorpion-like animal from the Silurian rocks of Rootzikul. Half the size of nature. (Cut lent by Macmillan's Co., New York, from Zittel's *Palæontology*.)

and differs from crabs. It is the only surviving representative of the aquatic ancestors from

## THE KING CRAB

which the modern air-breathing scorpions and spiders have been developed.

From amongst all the great variety of extinct

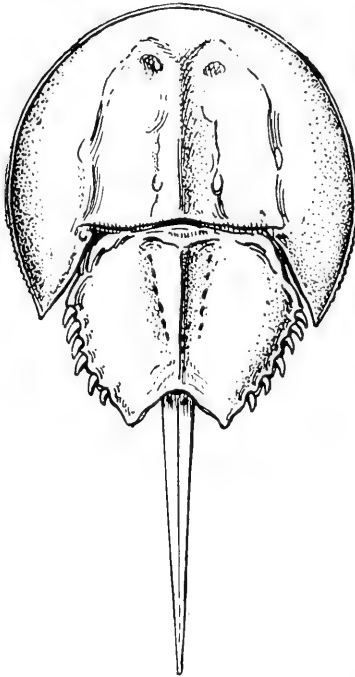


FIG. 210.—Dorsal view of the King-Crab (*Limulus polyphemus* Linnæus), one-fourth the size of nature. (Cut lent by Messrs. Macmillan from Parker and Haswell, *Text-book of Zoology*.)

invertebrate animals, I select for our last illustrations and descriptions a few of the beautiful stone-lilies or Pentacrini, or Encrinites as they

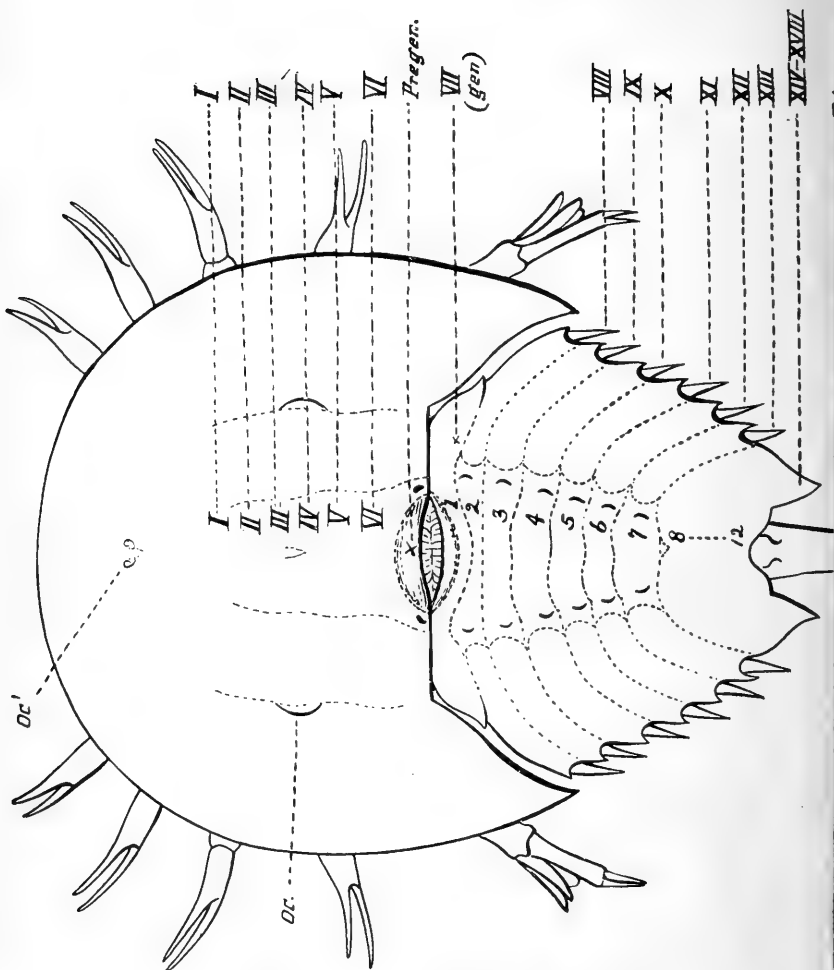


FIG. 211.—Diagram of the dorsal surface of a King-Crab, to show the head-shield carrying the central eyes (*oc'*) and the lateral eyes (*oc*), and corresponding to six segments *I* to *VI*); also the posterior shield, corresponding to twelve segments (*VII* to *XVIII*), and the terminal post-anal spine (*PA*), which is identical in position with the scorpion's sting (see Figs. 210 and 213).

# THE KING CRAB

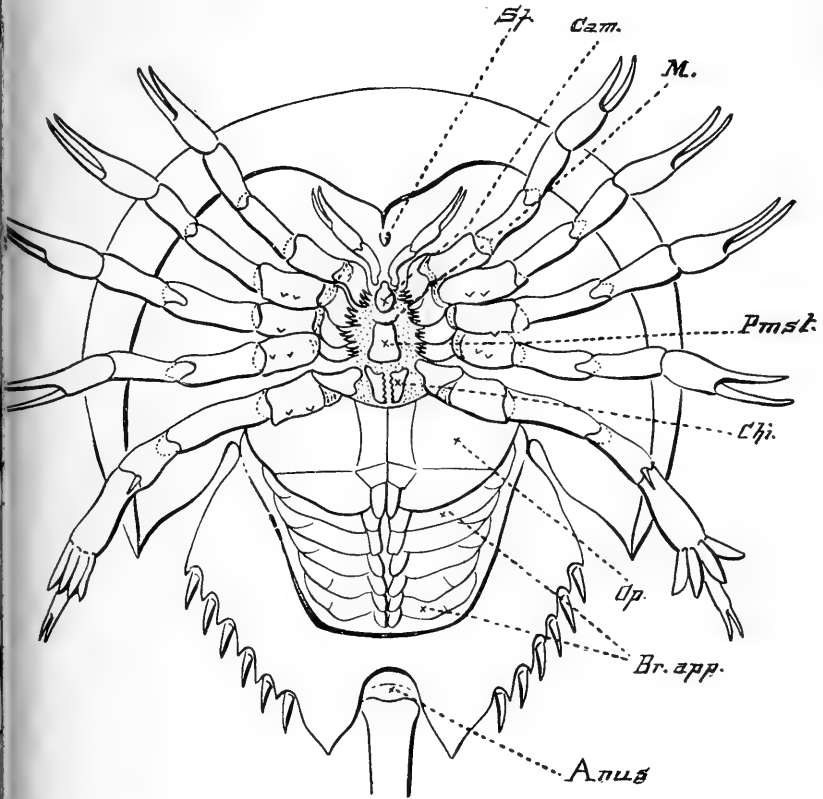


FIG. 212.—Diagram of the ventral surface of the same King-Crab, showing the six legs, the genital operculum (*Op*) and the branchial plates (*Br. app.*). *Sfr.*, sub-frontal piece; *Cam.*, upper lip or camerostome; *M.*, mouth; *Pmst.*, anterior sternal plate; *Chi.*, the chilaria, which are the same parts as are seen in the pentagonal sternum of the Scorpion (Fig. 206, *met*) and in the oval plate of *Pterygotus* (Fig. 207, *m*).

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

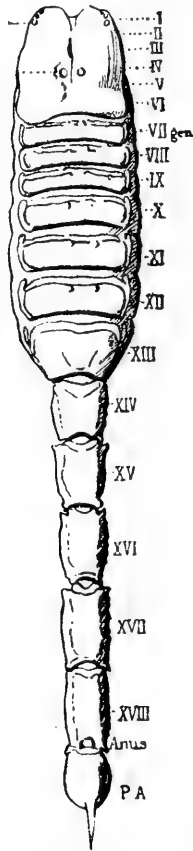


FIG. 213.—Dorsal view of the eighteen segments and post-anal spine or sting (*PA*) of a Scorpion's body to compare with those of *Eurypterus* (Fig. 209) and of the King-Crab (Fig. 211). In each of these the head-shield corresponds to six segments, as indicated by the legs (see Fig. 206 for the legs of the Scorpion).

were long ago called. They have a very interesting history, for they were known as fossils as

## THE STONE LILIES

long ago as the seventeenth century, many years before they were found in the living state. They are a kind of star-fish, with long delicate arms attached to a central cup or body



FIG. 214.—Slab containing *Pentacrinus hemeri*. The stalks are sometimes eighteen feet in length. (Photograph lent by Dr. Bather).

which is mounted on a jointed stem, which is often of great length. Several kinds are shown in the figures 214, 215, 216. The fossil remains which we find are the hard in-

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

ternal skeleton, consisting of carbonate of lime, which was a very prominent feature in their structure. It is of the same nature as the hard box-like skeleton of the sea-urchins, which, with

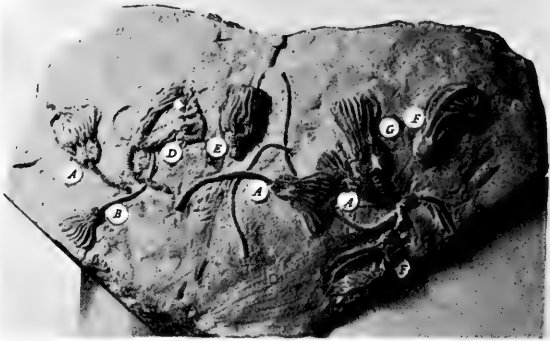


FIG. 215.—Photograph of a block of Limestone of the Carboniferous period from Iowa, United States of America, showing several kinds of Stone-lilies or Encrinites. They are lettered as follows : A. *Rhodocrinus kirbyi*, W. and Sp. B. *Rhodocrinus watersianus*, W. and Sp. C. *Platycrinus planus*, Ow. and Sh. D. *Platycrinus symmetricus*, W. and Sp. E. *Dorycrinus immaturus*, W. and Sp. F. *Dichocrinus inornatus*, W. and Sp. (Photograph lent by Dr. Bather).

the star-fishes, form the great group called by naturalists the Echinoderma.

In the eighteenth century a specimen of a living Encrinite or stalked star-fish was discovered in the deep water off Martinique in the West Indies, and was brought in a dried con-



## THE STONE LILIES

dition to Europe and described as a “sea-palm-tree.” For a long time such specimens were very rare and difficult to obtain, but now a great number have been dredged up in deep water in



FIG. 216.—*Encrinurus fossilis* of Blumenbach from rock of Jurassic age : the original “Stone-lily.” (Photograph lent by Dr. Bather.)

different parts of the world. Still there are only a dozen or so of different kinds or species of the Encrinites still living, whereas in all the older rocks we find their remains often in great

## EXTINCT. ANIMALS

profusion. Many hundreds of extinct kinds are known and they occur as far back as the Cambrian rocks and are wonderfully varied and abundant in the Silurian, Devonian and Carboniferous (Fig. 215). Some of the finest are found in the Jurassic strata (Figs. 214 and 216).

A very interesting discovery in regard to the Encrinites was made by a celebrated English naturalist, Vaughan Thompson, in 1836, who was an army surgeon and quartered at Cork, where he studied the marine animals of Queenstown harbour. He found out many new and important things by watching the growth from the egg by means of the microscope of barnacles, starfishes and sea-moss, which he kept alive in small glass vessels.

Vaughan Thompson first of all discovered in the sea at Queenstown a minute Encrinite, not a third of an inch long (Fig. 217), and to this he gave the name *Pentacrinus europæus*. The large one from the West Indies was at that time the only other living Encrinite known, and was called *Pentacrinus asteria*.

This was a sufficiently astonishing discovery, but more was to come. Vaughan Thompson found in the next place that the body of his

## THE BRITISH ENCRINITE

little *Pentacrinus europæus* grows larger and larger whilst the stalk shrivels and ceases to

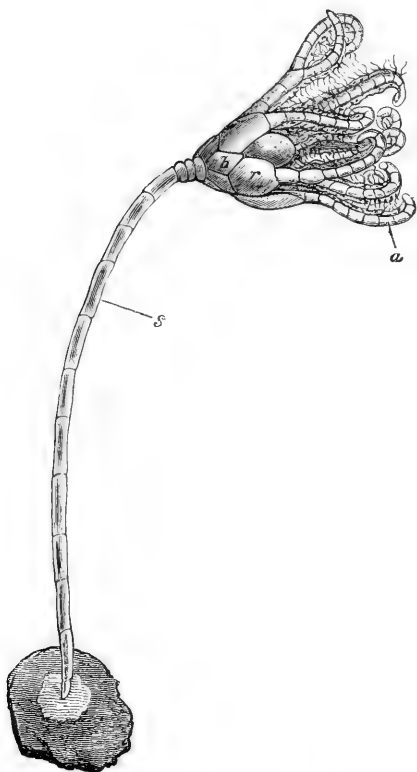


FIG. 217.—The living British Encrinite, the minute young of the Feather Starfish (*Comatula* or *Antedon*), greatly magnified. (Lent by the Trustees of the British Museum.)

grow, so that the animal becomes detached and swims away freely by the movement of its

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

arms. It grows up to be a well-known star-fish, the feather-star or comatula (Fig. 218). At first this history was not believed, and the Royal Society of London refused to publish



FIG. 218.—Drawing by Mr. Berjeau from an actual specimen of the Feather Star-fish (*Comatula* or *Antedon rosacea*), showing the ten “pinnate” or feather-like arms rising from the edge of the disc or central body, and the small grasping “cirrhi” by which the animal is clinging to a stone. Of the natural size. (Original.)

Vaughan Thompson’s account of what he had seen. But it was soon fully established. The little Pentacrini were bred in glass jars by many observers from the eggs of the feather-

## YOUNG OF THE FEATHER STAR

star, and all of them were seen to proceed after a certain time to produce freely-swimming little star-fish. Thus it was proved, what indeed is clear enough from the structure of its feathered arms and other parts, that the feather-star or comatula is unlike other star-fishes and is a *Pentacrinus* (or stone-lily or *Encrinite* or *Crinoid*) which has lost its stalk. And all the time that the naturalists of 250 years ago were disputing as to the real nature of the stone-lilies found in the rocks, little stone-lilies a quarter of an inch long were being abundantly produced every year close to hand in the sea on the rocky shores of England and France and in the Mediterranean. Whilst the first recent unfossilized *Pentacrinus* seen by naturalists was brought all the way from Martinique, any number of a minute size were to be found living on our own shores. But these European *Pentacrini* escaped observation on account of their minute size and the sudden dwindling and loss of the stalk. Only in its very young stage does the common feather-star of to-day retain the most remarkable characteristic of its remote Cambrian ancestors, the stalk. But it does for a brief week or so, whilst almost invisible to the unaided eye, possess a well-

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

grown stalk by which it is fixed just as were its remote forefathers by their splendid waving stems many feet in length.

---

In these pages I have only been able to bring to the reader's notice a few of the marvellous and delightful things which we know as "fossils"—only a very small selection of what is known about extinct animals. I have avoided going into much detail and using more technical terms and long names than is absolutely necessary. It is impossible to speak of these things without mentioning their names; and though it is true that a fossil "called by any other name" would still be full of interest, yet we must have a definite name by which to speak of each kind of animal and each kind of rock. If one's interest is aroused in these astoundingly ancient and curious remains of extinct creatures, it becomes after all no very difficult matter to remember their names and to distinguish them from each other as well as to recognize them when we come across the names in books or museums. To learn more than the few facts which I have so briefly stated in these pages,

## THE FOSSIL-HUNTER'S SPORT

the reader should visit many times the Natural History Museum, see the actual specimens, and by the aid of the illustrated guide-books get to know more details about them. And if he or she have the chance and can go and hunt in some of the quarries or cliffs which are so often full of fossils, an endless delight and a health-giving pursuit is the prospect before him or her. Fossil-hunting with hammer and chisel and a bag to be laden with specimens, is splendid exercise, and, if skilfully conducted, an exciting form of sport. Even within reach of a Londoner's day there are the brickfields of Ilford and Grays, where I used to get remains of mammoth, rhinoceros and such beasts; there are the chalk and tertiary strata of Charlton in Kent full of fossils; the Red Crag pits of Suffolk; the oolites of Oxford; the sponge-gravel of Farringdon. A very little longer journey brings the fossil-hunter to the Isle of Wight, which used to be, and I doubt not still is, a magnificent preserve of Eocene, Greensand and Wealden fossils; and not further off in length of journey are the Malvern hills, with Silurian and Devonian strata exposed in quarries and railway cuttings,

## EXTINCT ANIMALS

teeming with fossils. And there is always the chance—a good sportsman's chance—of finding “something new” if one understands the business and is never wearied of digging in sand and clay, and hammering the rock, and hunting up quarrymen and those delightful people—rarer now than they were forty years ago—the local naturalists. I hope that many, if not all of my readers, may be incited by the accounts and pictures of extinct animals which I have given in these pages, to become “soldiers of the hammer,” as Sir Roderick Murchison used to call us, and collectors of fossils—and if blessed by good fortune, discoverers of things as yet unknown to man.



## INDEX

### A

Abbeville neighbourhood,  
flint implements found  
in, 87

Advice to those interested in  
extinct animals, how  
to obtain knowledge,  
fossil-hunter's sport,  
etc., 294-295

*Aegocerus capricornus*, 267

*Æpyornis* (moa of Madagas-  
car), size of egg laid by,  
243

### Africa :

Central Africa under the  
equator :

Five-horned giraffe—  
specimen shot by Sir  
H. Johnston, 158

Giraffe still existing, pro-  
tection required, 20

Okapi—skin and skulls  
discovered by Sir  
Harry Johnston, 161,  
163

Ethiopian region—zoologi-  
cal province, 63, 65

### South Africa :

Giraffe extinct, 20

Lycosaurus — reptile  
found in Northern  
Russia allied to, 221

Pariasaurus—skull, speci-  
men discovered in Rus-  
sia similar to one dis-  
covered in South  
Africa, 220

### Africa :

South Africa—*contd.*

Quagga, a native of,  
18

Theromorph reptiles  
found in rocks of Cape  
Colony, 210, 211, 212

Zebra common in, 20

African elephant *refer* to  
title Elephants

African square-mouthed rhi-  
noceros, 144

Skull compared with that  
of *Rhinoceros antiqui-  
tatis*, 9, 10

Age of extinct animals—great  
age of remains, 3, 218

Air-breathing vertebrates—  
Nose-passages in living  
and extinct crocodiles,  
difference in position  
of, 191

Aleutian Islands, sea-cow  
found in, 20

Amalitzky, Professor, 212,  
214, 216, 219, 221

### America, South :

Animal remains found in,  
167

Iguana — similarity of  
teeth to those of the  
iguanodon, 200

Megatherium, 7, 9

Mylodon, discovery of  
remains in cave in  
Patagonia *see* Mylo-  
don.

## INDEX

- America, South :
- Animals found, etc.—*contd.*
    - Phororachus — gigantic extinct specimen, photograph, etc., 239, 240
    - Size of recent animals compared with their representatives in the past, 166
    - Toxodon, 8, 9
  - Coast level, changes in, 38, 39, 40
  - Fishes—mud-fishes allied to the ganoid fish, 248
  - Neatta breed of cattle, “bull-dogging” of skull, 104
  - Neo-tropical region :—zoological province, 65
- American mastodon *see* Mastodons
- Amiens neighbourhood, flint implements found in, 86, 87
- Ammonites—where found, structure of shell, animal living in the last chamber of the shell, etc., 267, 268
- Animals which lived inside, similarity to cuttle-fish, 269
  - Extinct allies, 268, 269
- Amphibia animals :
- Labyrinthodonts, creatures allied to, 245
  - Variety found in the carboniferous system, 245
- Anatomy—science of comparative anatomy, 67
- Ancestors :
- Mammals, size and description of original “type,” 114
  - Young animals, features resembling ancestors, which disappear on attaining full size, 106
  - (*for* particular animals *see* their names, Horse, Elephant, etc.)
- Anchitherium—three-toed ancestor of the horse, 136
- Ancyloceras, shell of, 269
- Andes—height partly acquired by rising of coast, 38
- Andrews, Dr., 123, 124, 125, 126
- Animal life, earliest forms of, preceding the Cambrian Trilobites and Lingula—no remains of soft-bodied animals in the rocks, etc., 263, 275
- Animal morphology, 67
- Animals which are becoming extinct :
- Beaver, 15, 16
  - Giraffe, 20, 156
  - Tortoise, 28, 29
  - Wolf, 14
- Anning, Miss, 6
- Antiquity of man in Europe, 85–87
- Antwerp, shark’s teeth found in, 264
- Apteryx :
- Egg of the ostrich, giant moa and apteryx, size compared, 242, 243

## INDEX

### Apteryx—*contd.*

Wingless live bird found in New Zealand, 241

Aquatic creatures refer to titles, Reptiles, Scorpions, Fishes, Shells, etc.; *also* names of creatures.

Arachnida class, king crab member of, 281

Archæopteryx, toothed bird, 236

Berlin specimen, 236, 238

Fingers, three distinct fingers, 237

Form, shape, etc., with tail like lizard and true bird feathers, 238

Archangel, North Russia—Professor Amalitzky's discoveries, 212–222

### Argentine Republic :

Glyptodon—Armadillo-like animal from Pleistocene, 170

Megatherium, skeleton of, found in alluvial sands, 7, 9

Toxodon, 8, 9

Armadillo-like animal, Glyptodon—enormous armadilloes, etc., 170, 171

Armadilloes of South America: Hairy armadillo, photograph, 169

Size compared with representatives in the past, 166, 167

### Arsinöotherium :

Appearance in life, picture showing probable appearance, 153

### Arsinöotherium—*contd.*

Discovery in Upper Eocene sands of Egyptian Fayum, 151

Horns and teeth, 154

Name, origin of, 152

Skull, 152

Ashmole, Mr. E., 27

Atlantosaurus—example of size to which some of the Dinosaurian reptiles attained, 197, 198, 199

Photograph of thigh-bone, 11

Auk *see* Great Auk

### Australia :

#### Fishes :

Lung-fish *Ceratodus*, illustration, 252

Mud-fish found in rivers of Queensland, 248

Kinds of animals—no aboriginal Placentals, etc., 64

Land of the Marsupials or pouched mammals : bones of gigantic creatures discovered, 184

(*for* particular animals *see* their names)

Reptile *Chlamydosaur* from Queensland — photograph, 195

Size of recent animals compared with their representatives in the past, 166

## B

Babbage, Mr., 34

Basilosaurus, 76

Bather, Dr., 287, 288, 289

## INDEX

- Bats' wings—resemblance between wings of a Pterodactyles and those of a bat, 232, 233
- Beadnell, Mr., 152
- Beaver extinct in England, still existing in Europe and America, 15, 16
- Beecher, Prof. C. E., 274, 281
- Belemnite's cuttle-fish—fossils called "thunderbolts" in parts of England, etc., 270
- Berjeau, Mr., 292
- Bird-like footprints on slab of Triassic rock from Connecticut, 54
- Birds :
- Animals, birds constituting group of, 23, 56
  - Derived from reptiles, reptiles coming nearest to birds in structure, etc., 202, 235, 236, 239
  - Feather-bearing wing of modern birds, beginning of, 202
  - Fossil remains, where found, etc., 236, 239
  - New Zealand—giant birds *see* New Zealand
  - Skull, single joint at back of, 74
  - Teeth, fossil remains of birds with full set of teeth like those of reptiles, 236, 237
- Wingless birds :
- Loss of wings, causes, etc., 241, 243
  - Remains of, where found, etc., 240
- Wingless birds—*contd.*
- Water-bird, *Hesperornis*, etc., 244
- Wings :
- Fin-like organs, wings probably derived from, 234
  - Reptiles — wings of the flying reptile, Pterodactyle, compared with, 233 (*for* particular birds *see* their names)
- Birkenia—oldest remains of fishes which have been discovered, 262
- Bognor Rock — photograph of slab with shells embedded, 45
- Bones :
- Age of remains discovered, 3
  - Buried remains indicating kind of animal, food, etc., 2-4
  - Recognition of—marks, etc., by which fragments of bone may be referred to their proper classes, 67, 72-76 (*see also* Skulls)
- Boucher de Perthes, M., 87
- Brains, size of :
- Dinoceras* and *Titanotherium*, brains much smaller than those of recent big animals, 148-151, 209
  - Size of, in proportion to body — tiny size of brains of Dinosaurian reptiles, probable effect on their ceasing to exist, 209

## INDEX

- Brontosaurus—skeleton and probable appearance in life, 204, 205, 206
- Brussels—discovery of complete skeletons of huge Iguanodons in coal mine, 200
- Buckle-head fish found in oldest Devonian strata, saddler's knife-shaped head, etc., 256—illustration, 258
- “ Bull-dogging ” of skull in elephants, pugs, etc., 103-105, 106
- Bulls :
- Urus of Julius Cæsar, 16, 17
  - Wild cattle still found in England, ancestry of, 16, 17
- Burchell's rhinoceros or square-mouthed African rhinoceros *see* Rhinoceros
- Buthus Australis* : Drawing of desert scorpion, 276
- C
- Cambrian Rocks, shells of *Lingula* found in—fossil shells identical with those of a living animal of a high rank in scale of structure, 272, 273
- Cape Colony, *refer* to Africa, South
- Carboniferous system, variety of amphibia found in, 245, 246
- Carcharodon megalodon*—tooth of the great shark, 265
- Carcharodon rondeletii*—jaws of large recent shark, 264
- Cariama or Screamer—gigantic extinct South American Phororachus, etc., 240
- Carnegie, Mr. Andrew, 204
- Cattle :
- “ Bull-dogging ” of skull in Neatta breed, 104
  - Wild cattle still to be found in England, ancestry of, 16, 17
- Causes of extinction of animals :
- Changes in the surface of the earth—conditions of life altered for the animals, 31 *and note*
  - Development of ancestral form in different directions, 29, 30
  - Man's interference, 28
- Caves :
- Engravings on ivory and bone found in, 90-92
  - Mylodon, remains discovered in cave in south-west Patagonia *see* Mylodon
- Cephalaspis—saddler's knife-shaped head and scale-bearing body, 256—illustration, 258
- Ceratodus—Australian lungfish related to ancient extinct fishes, 248—illustration, 252
- Ceteosaurus—remains found near Oxford, 204—probable appearance in life, 206

## INDEX

- Chalk—tilted strata at Seaford, Sussex, 50
- Changes in the earth :  
Animals, effect on—change of form or extinction, 31 *and note*  
Difficulty of realizing changes, inability to think in long enough lapses of time, 13  
Eating away of edge of land by sea waves, 42  
Incessant and great changes, 12  
Land added to the coast by the sea, 43, 44  
Rising and sinking of surface of the land, changes in distribution of land and water, 31  
Europe :  
Elevation of the seabottom, effect on distribution of land and water, 40, 41, 42  
Middle Tertiary Period—map showing attempt to determine distribution of land and water, 42, 43  
Fossils as a means of tracing former connection of different land surfaces, 66, 67  
Places where there is evidence of change in level, 38, 39  
Roman remains at Puzzuoli, with photographs showing the temple as it was and is now, 32-38
- Changes in the earth :  
Rising and sinking of surface, etc.—*contd.*  
Washing of material from surface of land by rains and rivers, 42, 43, 44
- Charlton, Kent—where fossils are to be found, 295
- Cheirotherium — footprints shown on slab of Triassic rock, 55
- Chili — coast level, changes in—alleged Spanish inscription on rocks, 38, 39, 40
- Chimpanzee, skull of, compared with skulls of monkey-man and modern man, 88-90
- Chlamydosaur from Queensland—photograph, 195
- Classification of animals :  
Great groups of the pedigree of animals, list of, 56  
Grouped into divisions, etc., according as they are like or unlike in details of structure, 72  
Mammals, tabular list of chief orders, 57  
Reptiles, tabular list of chief orders, 58, 190
- Clouded tiger, teeth of, 81
- Coast :  
Eating away of the edge of the land by sea waves, 42  
Level, changes in—*see* title, Changes in the earth—Rising and sinking of surface of the land

## INDEX

- Cocosteus — curious fish found in the same rocks as the Pterichthys, 256  
Huge fish allied to found in Ohio, U.S., 256—illustration, 257
- Cochlea—spiral cochlea a distinctive mark of mammals, 75
- Collections of fossils—delights of fossil-hunting, where to seek fossils, etc., 295
- Comatula* or *Antedon*—living British Encrinite, minute young of the featherstarfish, 291, 292
- Condyles of the skull, mammals distinguished from birds and reptiles, 73
- Cope, Professor, 206
- Coypu rat, teeth of, 81, 82
- Crab—king crab *see* that title
- Crocodile :  
Air-breathing — different position of nose-passages in living and extinct crocodiles, 191  
Skull, photograph of, showing single condyle, 74  
Teeth — photographs of gharial and true crocodile showing peg-like teeth, 82, 83
- Crumpling of strata *see* Tilting
- “Crust” of the earth a mere skin, 50
- Cuttle-fish — Belemnite's cuttle-fish, 270, 271
- Cynognathus — Theromoph reptile, 210
- D
- Deer—skeleton of male of giant Irish deer, 94, 95
- Definition of extinct animals, 1
- Devonshire—change in coast level at Plymouth, 38
- Diagrams :  
King-crab, 284, 285  
Stratified rocks, table showing approximate thickness of systems of strata and position in which animal remains have been found, 60–62
- Dicynodon—Theromorph reptile, 210
- Dimetrodon—reptile of the Theromorphan group, 210
- Dinichthys—fish allied to the Cocosteus found in Devonian rocks of Ohio, 256—illustration, 257
- Dinoceras* :  
Brains much smaller than those of recent big animals, 148–151, 209  
Horns and tusks, 147  
Picture of, probable appearance in life, 149  
Skeletons found in Upper Eocene of Wyoming, 147, 148
- Dinosaurian group of reptiles :  
Birds, structure of—reptile coming nearest to, 236

## INDEX

- Dinoceras* :
- Dinosaurian group of reptiles—*contd.*
  - Brains, tiny size in proportion to body, 208
  - Extinct order of reptiles, 192
  - Huge carnivorous Dinosaurs which had been superseded by lions and tigers of to-day, 192
  - Jurassic Dinosaur Stegosaurus, drawing of, 208
  - Profusion in which bones have been found in United States—skill and success of the American naturalists, etc., 204
  - Shape and form—drawing of skeleton, etc., 194, 197, 199
  - Size to which some of the Dinosauria attained, 197
    - Large in the body as huge elephants, 208
  - Three-horned dinosaur, Triceratops, appearance in life—drawing, 207
  - Walking on hind legs and on all fours, 199, 204  
(*refer also to names of reptiles of this order, such as Iguanodon, Atlantosaurus, Megalosaurus, etc.*)
  - Dinotherium, mastodon-like creature found in the Miocene, 117, 118
  - Diplodocus skeleton in Carnegie Institute at Pittsburgh, etc., 204—probable appearance in life, 206
  - Diprotodon—giant Australian marsupial
    - Feet—Dr. Stirling's discovery, 185—photograph, 188
    - Remains of specimens of Diprotodon discovered in morass in South Australia, 185, 187
    - Skeleton—drawing made by Sir Richard Owen, 186
    - Skull, drawing of, with a human skull beside it to give a scale, 184, 185
  - Dipterus—extinct Devonian fish found in Scotland and Russia, 250, 251—illustration, 253
  - Distribution of animals—Zoogeographical map, 63–66
  - Distribution of land and water, changes in *see* title, Changes in the earth — Rising and sinking of surface of the land
  - Dodo :
    - Extinct—causes, etc., 26
    - Head and foot, etc.—remnants of living dodos seen by Europeans, 28
    - Live specimens exhibited in Europe in 1610 and 1620, 27



# INDEX

## Dodo:

- Extinct, causes, etc.—*contd.*
- Loss of power of flight, causes, etc., 243
- Mauritius, discovery in, 26
- Oxford University specimens, fate of, 27
- Photographs of bird and skeleton, 26, 27
- Skeletons and bones discovered since extinction, 28
- Dog-fish—most ancient kind of fish known, 247
- Dogs' skulls, shortening of face in bulldogs and pugs, 104, 105
- Dragon-fly's wings preserved in stratified rock, 46, 47
- Drawing, skill of primitive men—photographs of engravings on ivory and bone, etc., 90–92
- Drepanaspis—strange fossil fish same age as the Pteraspis — Professor Traquair's drawings, etc., 260, 261, 262
- Dromatherium—lower jaws of ancient mammals, 189
- Dryolestes—lower jaws of ancient mammals, 189
- Dunwich, city swallowed up by the sea, 43
- Divina, river—cliffs where nodules containing skeletons of reptiles are found—Professor Amalitzky's discoveries, 212–222

## E

- Ear—spiral internal ear, distinctive mark of a mammal, 74–76
- Earthquakes, cause of, 50
- Edentata—group of mammals peculiar to South America, extinction of the monstrous animals, 167  
(*refer also to titles, Sloths, Armadilloes, Mylodon, etc.*)
- Education, art of—logical method *v.* exciting the desire to know, 4
- Eggs, size compared—eggs of the apteryx, ostrich and giant moa, 242, 243
- Egypt—Fayum Desert, discoveries of bones by Dr. Andrews and the Egyptian survey, 123–132
- Elasmotherium, 144
- Elephants:
  - Ancestral history traced back through series from bulldog-faced elephants to ordinary mammals *see* title, Mastodons
  - “Bull-dogging” or shortening of the face, 103, 104, 105, 106
  - Photographs of skulls, 104, 107, 108, 109
  - Dinotherium*—extinct side-branch of elephant family, 117, 118
  - Hairy skin of new-born young, 95

## INDEX

- Elephants—*contd.*  
 Head of African elephant with uplifted trunk, drawing of, 122  
 Indian and African elephants compared—size, ears, tusks, etc., 95, 96–100  
 Mammoth *see* that title  
 Skeleton of Indian elephant, 101  
 Teeth :  
   Description of, 107–110  
   Ridges on molar teeth, 110–112  
 Tusks, 99–101, 107  
 Trunk, origin of, 119–122  
 Emin Pasha, 101  
 Encrinites *see* Stone-lilies  
 England :  
   Plesiosaurs, remains of, discovered in south of England, 225  
   Theromorphs, remains of, found in England, 210  
   (*for* particular counties *see* their names)  
*Equus Johnstoni*—name given to the Okapi by Dr. Sclater, 164  
 Ethiopian region—zoological province, 63, 65  
 Europe :  
   Antiquity of man, 85–87  
   Elevation of sea-bottom, effect on distribution of land and water, 40, 41, 42  
   Middle Tertiary Period, map showing attempt to determine distribution of land and water, 42, 43  
 Eurypterids—aquatic scorpion-like creature, 278, 280  
   Animal which connects scorpions with the extinct Eurypterids—king crab, 280  
 Eurypterus — scorpion-like creature, 278, 282, 286  
 Eyes—third eye called the pineal eye, placed on the top of head of the ichthyosaurus, 227, 228
- F
- Fayum Desert, discoveries of bones by Dr. Andrews and the Egyptian survey, 123–132  
 Feather star-fish *refer* to Stone-lilies  
 Feathers of birds *refer* to Birds, *also* names of birds  
 Fingers, birds with—Archæopteryx with three distinct fingers, 237  
 Fins :  
   Fish-like reptile, ichthyosaurus, 227  
   Fishes' fins *see* Fishes  
   Wings probably derived from, 234  
 Fish-like reptiles—ichthyosaurus, drawing, 226  
 Fishes :  
   Ancient fish—most ancient kind of fish known, 247  
   Fins :  
     Lobate fins of the mud-fish, 248

## INDEX

- Fishes—*contd.*
- Tail-fin, disappearance of, in living mud-fishes, 251
  - Triangular tail-fins, etc., of the ganoid fishes, 248, 251, 252, 253
  - Flying fishes, 232
  - Forefathers of later fish—improbability of curious looking fishes of the Upper Silurian strata being actual forefathers of all later fish, 263
  - Head and body shields—Pteraspis and Cephalaspis, 257, 258, 259
  - Lungs as well as gills possessed by mud-fish of Africa, etc., 248
  - Mud-fish allied to the ganoid fishes, where found, etc., 248
  - Oldest remains of fishes which have been discovered, 262
  - Recent discoveries from the Upper Silurian strata of Scotland, 262
  - Saddler's knife-shaped head and scale-bearing body of the Cephalaspis, 256, 257, 258
  - Scales—hard bony scales of the ganoid and fishes allied to, 247, 249, 250
  - Shells with animals living inside *see* Shells
  - Silver-scaled fish—variety, comparative recent origin, etc., 246  
(*see also* names of fishes)
  - Five-horned giraffe *see* Giraffe
  - Flightless birds *refer* to Birds, *also* names of birds
  - Flint implements :
    - Antiquity of man, evidence of, 87
    - Photographs of flint instruments from gravel pit at St. Acheuil, 86
    - Places where flint implements have been found, 85, 86, 87
  - Flying animals :
    - Birds *see* that title
    - Pterodaelytes, flying fishes, etc., 231, 233, 234
  - Folding and crumpling of strata *see* Tilting
  - Footprints of animals in ancient rocks, 53-55, 199
  - Fossil-hunting—delights of, where to seek for fossils, etc., 295
  - Fossils :
    - Earliest yet discovered are of remains of highly-developed animals and by no means near the beginning of animal life, 274
    - Fayum Desert, discoveries by Dr. Andrews and the Egyptian survey, 123-132
    - Oldest which are known—remains of small marine creatures, etc., 272
    - Position in which animal remains have been found

## INDEX

### Fossils—*contd.*

- Diagram, 60-62
- Importance of knowing where particular animals are found, means of ascertaining former connexion of different land surfaces, 67
- Stratified rocks, remains found on, 45-47
- France — flint implements found in, 85, 86, 87

### G

#### Ganoid fishes :

- Fishes belonging to the ganoid set, 248
- Fossil ganoid fish as discovered embedded in rock—illustration, 250
- Hard bony scales of—drawing, etc., 247
- Number of—number surviving at the present day, where to be found, etc., 247, 248
- (*for* particular specimens *see* their names)
- Gare-fowl *see* Great Auk
- Gaudry, M., 162
- Germany—Drepanaspis, fossil fish found in slate rocks of North Germany, 260, 261
- Gharial, Indian crocodile—photograph of jaw showing peg-like teeth, 82
- Giants, existence of, supposed from discovery of huge bones, 2

#### Giraffe :

- Animals allied to, with moderate length of neck, 158-165
- Extinct in South Africa, 20
- Five-horned giraffe, 156
- Horns or outgrowths, 157
- Skull—photograph, 157
- Specimen shot by Sir H. Johnston in Uganda, 156, 158
- Hoofs—double hoofs like other animals to which it was allied, 158
- Neck, true position of, 20, 21
- Protection required for—still existing in Equatorial Africa, 20
- Teeth—crown divided by slit into two halves described as bi-foliate—alleged animals with the same peculiarity of tooth, 159
- Glyptodonts—enormous armadilloes, 171
- Skeleton—drawing, 170
- Gonialites — extinct pearly nautilus, 268
- Gray's Inn Lane, flint implement found in, 86
- Great Auk :
  - Egg, 23, 25
  - Price paid for, number of specimens known, etc., 24
  - Extinct — skeleton found on coast of Newfoundland, 24
  - Photographs of bird and egg, 23, 25

## INDEX

### Great Auk—*contd.*

Places where great auk was to be found up to sixty years ago, 24

Size and appearance, 24

Wings, use of, as swimming organs, 244

Greece—giraffe-like animals found in Miocene strata, 160, 161

Groups of animals *see* Classification

Günther, Mr., 34

### H

Hamilton's, Duke of, estates, ancestry of wild cattle on, 17

Helladotherium — giraffe-like animal found in Miocene beds, 161

Skeleton—photograph, 162

### Herefordshire :

Fishes with head and body shields found in "cornstones," 258

Interesting specimens, found by the author, of the Pteraspis, 259, 260

Hesperornis — extinct water-bird, 244

Hipparion—ancestor of the horse, 136

Holarctic region — zoological province, 63, 65, 91

Holditch, Sir Thomas, 181

### Hoofs—double hoofs :

Giraffe family, 158

Okapi, giraffe-like animal, 161, 164

### Horns :

*Arsinötherium*, 154

Dinoceras, 147

### Horns—*contd.*

Five-horned giraffe, 157

Paired-horns—okapi, 164

Rhinoceros and creatures allied, 144, 146

### Horse :

#### Ancestors :

Five toes—Phenacodus, 139

Later stages from *Mesohippus* to the modern horse traced by abundant fossil remains, 139

Three-toed ancestors found in the Miocene and Pliocene :

*Anchitherium*, 136

*Hipparion*—side toes getting small, 136

*Mesohippus*, 136

Three toes on hind foot and four toes on front foot—*Hyracotherium*, 136, 137, 139, 140

Bones and teeth of the extinct South American genus, *Onohippidium* found in cave of Ultima Speranza, 180

Difference between the horse and central typical mammals, 132

Man and horse, skeletons compared, 70-72

Model of thoroughbred English horse, photograph of, 133

Size, increase in, 140, 166

#### Teeth :

Cheek-teeth of modern horse more complex than in ancestors, 140

## INDEX

### Horse—*contd.*

- Meshippus*, teeth of, 141
- Upper molar tooth of a recent horse, 142
- Toes and foot :
  - Description of bones of fore and hind foot, 134, 136
  - Living horses occasionally born with two toes attached to the splint bones, 139
  - Photographs of modern horse's foot and of four-toed and three-toed ancestors, 135, 137, 138
  - "Splint-bones," remains in modern horse of two additional toes, 136
- Hybrids—Okapi as hybrid or "mule" between zebra and giraffe theory, 164, 165
- Hyracotherium—ancestor of the horse, 136, 137, 139, 140
- Hyrax, fossil remains found in the Fayum, 125

### I

- Ichthyornis* — skeleton of toothed bird, 237
- Ichthyosaurus* :
  - Excrement, fossilized lump, showing spiral grooving, 229
  - Extinct order of reptiles, 192
  - Eyes—third or pineal eye placed on the top of the head, 227, 228

### *Ichthyosaurus—contd.*

- Fish-like or whale-like appearance, 226, 227
- Head of, from Liassic rocks of Lyme Regis, 6
- Large-paddled *ichthyosaurus* preserved in Liassic rock, 225
- Offspring of four-legged terrestrial reptiles, 227
- Size of, 222
- Skeletons, 225, 229
- Young, bringing forth alive, 231
- Iguana*—upper jaw showing serrated edges of teeth similar to those of the *iguanodon*, 200
- Iguanodon* :
  - Bones and teeth, discoveries made by Dr. Gideon Mantell, 199, 200
  - Footprint, supposed, in Isle of Wight sandstone, 54
  - Foot like that of a bird—stock from which birds have been derived, 202
  - Size, shape, etc.—probable appearance in living condition, 198, 199
- Skeletons :
  - Complete skeletons discovered near Brussels, 201
  - Drawing of, 197
  - Skull—specimen discovered near Brussels, 201—photograph, 202
  - Teeth showing serrated margin, 199

## INDEX

- Iguanodon—*contd.*  
Similarity of teeth to those of the little South American lizard iguana, 200
- Ilford brickfield, remains of mammoth, etc., found in, 92, 295
- Illustrations :
- American mastodon, 101
  - Ammonites, 267
  - Ancyloceras, shell of, 269
  - Apteryx, ostrich and giant moa with eggs, 242
  - Archæopteryx, 238
  - Armadillo, 169
  - Arsinötherium*, 152, 153
  - Atlantosaurus*, thigh-bone, 11
  - Beavers, 15
  - Belemnite'scuttle-fish specimens, 270, 271
  - Birkinia, Silurian fish, 262
  - Bognor rock, 45
  - Bones embedded in rock, from Pikermi near Athens, 2
  - Brain-cavity of *Dinoceras*, small size compared with that of the horse, etc., 150
  - Brontosaurus, skeleton, 205
  - Cephalaspis, 258
  - Ceteosaurus, *Diplodochus* and *Brontosaurus*, 206
  - Chilian coast, change in level; alleged Spanish inscriptions on rocks, 38, 39, 40
  - Chlamydosaur from Queensland, 195
  - Clouded tiger, teeth of, 81
  - Coccosteus: curious Devonian fish, 257
- Illustrations—*contd.*
- Coypu rat, teeth of, 82
  - Crocodile—fossil jaw, 82
  - Deer—skeleton of male of giant Irish deer, 94
  - Dinoceras*, 148, 149
  - Dinosaur stegosaurus, 208
  - Dinosaur, *Triceratops* — three-horned dinosaur, 207
  - Dinotherium*, skull of, 118
  - Diprotodon — skull, skeleton, etc., 185–188
  - Dodo, 26, 27
  - Drawings by primitive men 91, 92
  - Drepanaspis*, 261
  - Dromatherium*, lower jaws of, etc., 189
  - Divina river, Northern Russia — Professor Amalitzky's discoveries, 213
  - Ear of man, show spiral construction of internal ear, 74–76
  - Elephant, mammoth, and mastodon— transverse ridges on molar teeth, 110–113, 115
  - Elephants :
    - Head of African elephant, with uplifted trunk 122
    - Indian and African elephants, 97, 98
    - Skulls, 104, 107, 108, 109
    - Skulls and jaws of series of elephant ancestors, 126, 128
    - Tusks, specimens in Natural History Museum, 99

## INDEX

### Illustrations—*contd.*

- Fayum Desert, remains of silicified trees, 124
- Flint implements, 86
- Footprints of animals in ancient rocks, 54, 55
- Ganoid fish fossil, 250
  - Hard bony scales of, 247
- Giraffe, 21
  - Five-horned giraffe, 156, 157
  - Teeth of lower jaw and allied animals, 159
- Glyplodon—skeleton, 170
- Great auk and egg, 23, 25
- Horse :
  - Hyracotherium, Eocene ancestor, 139, 140
  - Model of thoroughbred English horse, 133
  - Phenacodus, skeleton of, 141
  - Toes and foot of modern horse and of four-toed and three-toed ancestors, 135, 137, 138
- Horse and man, skeletons compared, 70-72
- Human teeth, 80
- Ichthyornis—toothed bird, 237
- Ichthyosaurus, 6, 225, 226, 228, 229
- Iguanodon, 197, 198, 199, 200, 202
- Inostransevia, skeleton and skull, 220, 221, 222
- Jaw of mammal from Stonesfield slate, 84
- Jelly fish preserved in lithographic limestone, 48

### Illustrations—*contd.*

- King-crab, 281-286
- Lasanius—Silurian fish, 262
- Lingula, shell of, 272, 273
- Lizard :
  - Mexican horned lizard, 194
  - New Zealand lizard, Tuatara, 193
- Loligo media* — cuttle-fish living in British seas, 272
- Lyme Regis, strata of cliff at, 49, 51
- Mammoth :
  - Imaginary picture of, 96
  - Skeleton found frozen in Siberia, 93
- Mastodons :
  - Meritherium*, 129, 130
  - Tetrabelodon angustidens*, long-jawed Miocene mastodon, 116, 117, 119, 121
- Megalosaurus — skeleton, 203
- Megatherium—skeleton, 7
- Moa—New Zealand moa, 68, 69
- My lodon :
  - Remains of, discovered in cave,
  - Piece of skin of the mylodon, etc., 175, 176
  - Various specimens found with the remains of the mylodon, 177-182
  - View from the mouth of the cave on the fiord of the Ultima Speranza in Southern Patagonia, 174



## INDEX

### Illustrations—*contd.*

- Skeleton, 173
- Nodules containing skeletons of reptiles—Professor Amalitzky's discoveries, 213–216
- Occipital condyles in skulls of mammals and reptiles, 73, 74
- Okapi, specimen of, discovered by Sir Harry Johnston, etc., 163, 164, 165
- Osteolepis—extinct ganoid fish, 251
- Pariasaurus—skeleton, 211, 218—skull, 219
- Pearly nautilus, 267, 268
- Phororachus, 240
- Pig's teeth, 77, 79
- Plesiosaurus, 223, 224
- Polypterus of the Nile, 249
- Pteraspis, 259, 260
- Pterichthys, 254, 255
- Pterodactyles, 230, 231, 235
- Puzzioli, Roman remains at, 32, 33, 35, 36, 37
- Quagga, 18
- Rhinoceros :
  - Skeleton of *Rhinoceros antiquitatis*, 143
  - Skulls of African square-mouthed rhinoceros and of *Rhinoceros antiquitatis* (found in London), 10
  - Stuffed specimen of square-mouthed rhinoceros, 144
- Ripple marks preserved in Triassic strata, 53

### Illustrations—*contd.*

- Samotherium : skull, 161
- Scorpions and scorpion-like creatures, 276–283, 286
- Sea-cow discovered by Steller, 22
- Shark—jaw and tooth of the great shark, 264, 265
- Sivatherium, 160
- Skeleton of animal found embedded in calcareous rock at Montmartre, Paris, 46
- Skulls of monkey, primitive man, and modern man, 88, 89
- Sloth, 168, 171
- Stone-lilies, 287, 288, 289, 291
- Tilted strata of chalk at Seaford, Sussex, 50
- Titanotherium*, 145, 146, 147
- Tortoise of Court House, Mauritius, 29
- Toxodon, 8
- Trilobites from Silurian rocks of New York, 275
- Urus or bull of Julius Cæsar, 17
- Wings—birds, bats, and pterodactyles compared, 233
- Wings of dragon-fly and pterodactyle preserved in limestone, 47
- Wolf, 14
- Zebra, 19
- India—remains of Theromorphs found in, 210
- Indian elephant *refer* to title Elephants

## INDEX

- Indian or oriental region—  
zoological province, 63,  
65
- Information concerning ex-  
tinct animals, sources  
of :  
Author's advice to those  
seeking information,  
294  
Bones and teeth found in  
the earth, 2-4  
Tradition, 1
- Inostranestia — skeleton and  
skull of huge specimen  
discovered by Profes-  
sor Amalitzky, 220, 221
- Insects :  
Flying insects, 232, 234  
Fossilized wings, preserva-  
tion in stratified rock,  
46, 47
- Irish deer—skeleton of male  
of giant Irish deer, 94,  
95
- Isle of Wight :  
Footprint of animal in the  
sandstone, 54  
Fossils—where fossils are  
to be found, 295

### J

- Java—skull of monkey-man  
discovered in, 88
- Jaws *refer* to Teeth
- Jelly fish preserved in litho-  
graphic limestone, 48
- Johnston, Sir Harry, 156, 158,  
161, 163
- Julius Cæsar, great bull or  
urus of, 16, 17

### K

- Kangaroos—giant kangaroos :  
Bones of gigantic creatures  
found in Australia, 184  
Living specimens in Aus-  
tralia, size of, com-  
pared with gigantic ex-  
tinct creatures of the  
same kind, 166
- Kansas *refer* to United  
States of America
- King-crab  
Animal which connects the  
scorpions with extinct  
Eurypterids and Tri-  
lobites, 280  
Diagrams of, 284, 285  
Dorsal view of—illustra-  
tion, 283  
Member of class Arachnida  
—scorpion-like creature,  
281  
Only surviving representa-  
tive of aquatic ances-  
tors from which mod-  
ern air-breathing  
scorpions and spiders  
have been developed,  
282  
Segments and post-anal  
spine or sting of scor-  
pion to compare with  
the king-crab, 286
- Kipling, Mr. Rudyard, 120,  
122
- Kiwi—wingless bird found in  
New Zealand, 241
- Knowledge, imparting—logi-  
cal method *v.* exciting  
the desire to know,  
4

# INDEX

## L

- Labyrinthodonts :  
 Allied to creatures which form the class Amphibia, and essentially aquatic animals, 245  
 Size and shape of large alligators, 246
- Lanarkshire—fishes found in Silurian strata, 261
- Land, rising and sinking *see* title, Changes in the earth
- Land-dwelling reptiles *refer* to Reptiles, and names of reptiles
- Lasanius—oldest remains of fishes which have been discovered, 262
- Leeds, Mr. A. N., 223
- Lepidosiren — mud-fish of South America, 248
- Lepidosteus—specimen of ganoid fish in North American lakes, 248
- Lepidotus helvenis*—fossil ganoid fish—illustration, 250
- Limestone — fossilized wings of insects, etc., preserved in, 46, 47
- Limestone in solution, amount carried past Kingston by the Thames every year, 44
- Limulus Polyphemus*—dorsal view of the king-crab, 283
- Lingula, shells of, found in the Cambrian rocks, 272

## Lingula—*contd.*

- Complex structure of living owners of these shells. etc., 272, 273
- Lizard :  
 Chlamydosaur from Queensland—photograph, 195  
 Flying lizards, 234  
 Great girdled lizard—photograph, 196  
 Jawbones found in Oolitic strata supposed at first to be those of lizards, but afterwards found to belong to small mammals, 188  
 Mexican horned lizard or horned toad, 194  
 New Zealand lizard Tuatara—photograph, 193
- Local naturalists rarer now than they were forty years ago, 296
- Loligo media*—cuttle-fish living in British seas, 272
- London—skull of rhinoceros found in Whitefriars, 9, 10
- Lycosaurus — remains discovered in Cape Colony — *Inostransevia* allied to, 221
- Lyme Regis :  
 Ichthyosaurus head from Liassic rocks of, 6  
 Strata of cliff at, 48, 49, 51

## M

- Madagascar, wingless birds found in, 240
- Malta, shark's teeth found in, 264

# INDEX

- Malvern Hills—where fossils are to be found, 295
- Mammals :
- Ancestry—size and description of original “type,” 114
  - Brains of ancient big mammals much smaller than those of recent big animals, 148–151
  - Classification of—tabular list of chief orders, 57
  - Ear, spiral construction of internal ear, 74–76
  - Oldest remains—fossil jaw found at Stonesfield, one of most ancient evidences of existence, 82, 84, 186, 188
  - Skulls provided with *pair* of condyles, 73
  - Teeth *refer* to title, Teeth
- Mammoth :
- Appearance in life, imaginary picture of, 96
  - Description of, 91
  - Drawings by prehistoric men, 90, 91
  - Hairy skin, 94
  - Remains of, found all over the Holarctic region, 91, 92, 93
  - Skeleton of mammoth found frozen in Siberia, 93
  - Teeth—transverse ridges 110, 111
- Man :
- Prehistoric man *see* that title
- Man—*contd.*
- Skull, size of :
    - Giant Australian Diprotodon, size of skull compared with that of human skull, 185
    - Modern man compared with that of a monkey and of a primitive man, 88–90
  - Man and horse—skeletons compared, correspondence in details of structure, 70
  - Mantell, Dr. Gideon, 200
  - Maps :
    - Europe—elevation of the sea-bottom, effect on distribution of land and water, 40, 41, 42
    - Zoo-geographical map, 63–66
  - Marine creatures *refer* to titles, Reptiles, Fishes, Shells, *also* names of creatures
  - Marsh, Prof., 147, 206
  - Marsupials :
    - Australia distinguished by, 64
    - Giant Australian marsupial, Diprotodon, 184—skull and skeleton, 185, 186
    - Jawbones embedded and preserved in ancient rocks—specimen discovered in Stonesfield slate near Oxford, 186–188
  - Mastodon-like creature found in the Miocene—Dinotherium, 117, 118

## INDEX

- Mastodons :
- American mastodon, 100, 101, 102, 106, 113
  - Skull more projecting than that of an elephant, 105
  - Survival later in America than in Europe, 102
  - Teeth less peculiar than those of true elephants — fewer transverse ridges, 107, 112–113, 114
  - Meritherium*, Eocene (Egypt) :
    - Description of, head, teeth, etc., 128–132
    - Elephant ancestry, connection with, 132
    - More primitive mastodon than any yet known, 125
    - Picture representing probable appearance in life, 130
  - Palæomastodon, Eocene (Egypt), 126, 128
  - Description of—link in the series leading back from bulldog-faced elephants to ordinary mammals, 127
  - Size, 128
  - Skulls and jaws of series of elephant ancestors compared, 126, 127, 128
  - Tetrabeloden angustidens*, long-jawed Miocene mastodon :
    - Drawing representing probable appearance in life, 119
- Mastodons—*contd.*
- Tetrabeloden angustidens*—*contd.*
    - Skeleton from Miocene strata of south of France, 115, 116
    - Trunk not a “trunk,” but an elongated upper lip, 118
    - Tusks and horizontal “trunk,” use of, etc., 120, 121
  - Mauritius :
    - Dodo found in, 26
    - Giant tortoise living in Court House Garden, 28, 29
  - Megalosaurus :
    - Skeleton, drawing of, 203
    - Teeth, tiger-like teeth, 204
  - Megatherium :
    - Comparison with little living sloths of to-day, etc., 172
    - Photograph of skeleton, 7
    - Similarity to sloth, 9
  - Meritherium* *see* Mastodons
  - Meshippus — three-toed ancestor of the horse, 136
  - Teeth, 141
  - Meyer, Herman von, 76
  - Middle Tertiary Period, *see* Oligocene Period
  - Migration of Animals :
    - Results of—Tapir found alive in Sumatra and also in Central America, 66
    - Zoo-geographical map, 63–66
  - Miller, Hugh, 252–256

## INDEX

- Moa :
- Eggs of apteryx, ostrich and the giant moa—size compared, 242, 243
  - New Zealand giant bird *see* New Zealand
  - Size of the Madagascar moa, 242
- Models of horses and cattle :
- Set of, in the Natural History Museum, 133
  - Value of models as a record of best breeds, 134
- Monkey, monkey-man, and modern man—skulls compared, 88-90
- Monstrous size—giants in former days, theory of, 2, 165, 166
- Montmartre, Paris—skeleton of animal found in stratified rock, 46
- Moreno, Dr., 175
- Mud-fishes allied to the ganoid fishes — mud-fishes of Australia and South America, 248
- Mule — okapi as hybrid or “mule” between zebra and giraffe theory, 164, 165
- Murchison, Sir R., 296
- Mylodon :
- Date of extinction — supposed date, 174, 182, 183
  - Remains discovered in cave of the Ultima Speranza in South-west Patagonia—fresh remains, etc.
- Mylodon—*contd.*
- Alive in the cave—indications that the mylodons lived in the cave and were fed by the Indians, 178
  - Bones, claws, etc., of the mylodon, 178
  - Inhabitants of the cave : probable Indian inhabitants, 176
  - Pellets of dung of the mylodon, 178—photographs, 177, 181
  - Position of the cavern : explorers’ difficulties, 181
  - Skin covered with greenish-brown hair, 174 ; photograph, 175, 176
  - Skin, hair, etc., preservation of, in original state—probable explanation, 182
  - Various remains of the mylodons and of man, 177-180
  - Skeletons—comparison between the skeletons of the mylodon and two-toed sloth, 172, 173
- N
- Neanderthal, skulls of primitive men found in sand of, 90
- Neo-tropical region—zoological province, 63, 65

## INDEX

- New Zealand :
- Animals—New Zealand distinguished from the rest of the world, 64
  - Birds—giant birds :
    - Moa — ostrich-like bird, 240, 241
    - Skeleton constructed by Sir R. Owen, 69, 70
    - Thigh bone, from which existence of bird was inferred, 68, 70
    - Wingless birds found in New Zealand, 240, 241
  - Lizard *Tua-tara* — photograph, 193
  - Nile — *Polypterus*, specimen of ganoid fish still living in the Nile and other African rivers, 248—photograph, 249
  - Nodules containing skeletons of great reptiles—Professor Amalitzky's discoveries, 213–216
  - Nordenskjöld, Dr., 174
  - Norway — changes in coast level, 38
- O
- Object of the book—bringing to notice a few of the marvellous and delightful things which are known as “Fossils,” 294
  - Occipital condyles — mammals distinguished by, from birds and reptiles, 73
  - Okapi—animal allied to the giraffe :
    - Equus Johnstoni* — name given to the okapi by Dr. Sclater, 164
    - Hoofs, paired hoofs, 161, 164
    - Horns, paired horns, 164
    - Skin and skulls discovered by Sir Harry Johnston, 161, 163
    - Skull of a male okapi—photograph, 164
    - Species — smaller and larger species, 163
    - Specimen of the okapi—photograph, 163
    - Striped skin on legs and haunches, 162
    - Girdles and bands for ornament made out of skin by natives, 163
    - “Bandoliers” cut from the striped skin ; photograph, 165
    - Teeth—crown of tooth in lower jaw divided by slit into two halves, described as bi-foliate, 159, 162
    - Unknown species of animal—hybrid or mule between a zebra and giraffe theory, 164
  - Oligocene or Middle Tertiary Period — distribution of land and water in Europe, map showing attempt to determine, 42, 43
  - Oriental region — zoological province, 63, 65

## INDEX

- Orthoceras—extinct allies of pearly nautilus, 268
- Osteolepis — extinct ganoid fish :  
 Beautifully preserved specimens found in the Devonian strata, 248  
 Drawing, 251
- Ostrich-like bird—New Zealand moa *see* New Zealand
- Owen, Sir R., 68, 69, 70, 184, 186, 271
- Oxen :  
 Skull of ox, photograph showing occipital condyles, 73  
 Urus of Julius Cæsar, 16, 17  
 Wild cattle still to be found in England, ancestry of, 16, 17
- P
- Palæomastodon, Eocene (Egypt), 126, 127, 128
- Palæophonus hunteri*—drawing of the remains of a scorpion from Upper Silurian of Lesmahago, 277, 278
- Palæophonus nuncius*—Silurian scorpion of Gothland, 278
- Palæotherium — skeleton found in calcareous rock at Montmartre, Paris—photograph, 46
- Palæozoic strata—no reptile, bird, or mammal found in, 245
- Pariasaurus :  
 Nodules containing skeletons—Professor Amalitzky's discoveries, 216–220  
 Remoteness of the time when these reptiles lived, 218  
 Size of the reptile, 220  
 Skeleton set up by Professor Seeley, 211  
 Skeleton and skull removed from an archangel nodule, 218, 219  
 Skull of Pariasaurus discovered in Russia : species similar to one discovered in South Africa, 220
- Pearly nautilus—structure of shell, species now living, etc., 267, 268
- Penguins — use of wings as swimming organs, 244
- Pentacrini *see* Stone-lilies
- Permian strata on banks of the Dwina, North Russia — Professor Amalitzky's discoveries, 212–222
- Peterborough—skeleton of a Plesiosaur removed by Mr. A. N. Leeds—photograph, 223
- Phenacodus — five-toed ancestor of the horse, 139, 141
- Phororachus of South America—photograph, etc., 239, 240



## INDEX

- Phrynosoma orbiculare* (Mexican horned lizard or horned toad)—photograph, 194
- Pithecanthropus* or monkey-man—skull compared with skulls of chimpanzee and modern man, 88-90
- Placentalium terra—zoological province, 63, 64
- Plesiosaurs :  
 Extinct order of reptiles, 192  
 Form and shape—probable appearance in living condition, 224  
 Number of kinds discovered in Lias rocks of the south of England, 225  
 Size of, 222  
 Skeleton of, 223
- Plymouth—changes in coast level, 38
- Polypterus—specimen of ganoid fish still living in the Nile and other African rivers, 248—photograph, 249
- Prehistoric man :  
 Antiquity of remains in Europe, 85-87  
 Drawing, skill in — photographs of engravings upon bone and ivory, etc., 90-92  
 Skull compared with that of a monkey and of a modern man, 87-90
- Pritchard, Mr. Hesketh, 181
- Protopterus — mud-fish of Africa, 248
- Pteraspis—fish known by its shields, which covered head and body, where found, etc., 257, 258
- Hinder region unknown, 258
- Specimens obtained by the author in Herefordshire — unique specimens, etc., 259, 260
- Pterichthys — discoveries made by Hugh Miller from rocks of his native hills at Cromarty, 252
- Cardboard model made by Hugh Miller, 255
- Curious bony plates, soft scaly tail, etc., 255
- Outline drawing of the fish, 254
- Pterodactyles—flying reptiles  
 Different kinds of Jurassic pterodactyles — probable appearance in life, etc., 234, 235  
 Extinct order of reptiles, 192  
 Form, size, etc., as it appeared in flight, 231  
 Skeleton, 230  
 Wings :  
 Formation of — bat-like appearance, etc., 232, 233  
 Preserved in sandy limestone of Oolitic Age, 46, 47
- Pterygotus — scorpion-like creature, 278, 280

# INDEX

Puzzuoli or Puteoli, condition of Roman remains at : proof of changes that take place in the level of the land, 32-38

## Q

Quagga :

Extinct, owing to country ranged over being occupied by white men, 20

Photograph of specimen in Zoological Gardens in 1875, 18

South Africa, inhabitant of, 18

Queensland *refer* to Australia

Queenstown — Encrinite discovered by Vaughan Thompson, 290

## R

Raindrops, marks preserved on rocks which were once soft sand, 53

Rains and rivers, quantity of material carried off surface of land by, 43

Raised beaches, 38, 43, 44

Rats—teeth of Coypu rat, 81, 82

Reindeer—drawings by prehistoric men, found in caves, 90, 91, 92

Reptiles :

*Atlantosaurus*, thigh-bone of, from Jurassic rocks of U.S.A., 11, 12

Reptiles—*contd.*

Birds derived from — reptiles coming nearest to birds in structure, etc., 235, 236, 239

Classification of — tabular list of chief orders, 58

Crocodile *see* that title

Difference between living and extinct reptiles— separate orders made for living reptiles, 191

Extinct orders—disappearance of remains from rocks, etc., 192

Flying reptiles, 231

Groups, 190

Land-dwelling reptiles— great extinct reptiles, 190-222

Marine reptiles—representatives of extinct orders of huge aquatic creatures, 222

Pterodactyle skeleton preserved in lithographic limestone, 47

Size of extinct reptiles— enormous sizes, 167, 191

Snake, fossil remains of, found in the Fayum 125

Teeth :

Description of, 81

Peg-like teeth with single fangs, 81, 82, 83

(*refer also* to names of reptiles)

## INDEX

### Rhinoceros :

- Horns :
  - Composition of, etc., 144
  - Creatures allied to the rhinoceros, horns of, 144, 146
- Skulls compared — African square-mouthed rhinoceros and *Rhinoceros antiquitatis*, 9, 10
- Square-mouthed African rhinoceros (white rhinoceros), 144
- Rhinoceros antiquitatis*—woolly rhinoceros of late Pleistocene period in Europe and Siberia :
  - Hairy coat, 143
  - Skeleton of, 143
- Ripple marks preserved in Triassic strata, 53
- Rising and sinking of surface of the land *see* title, Changes in the Earth
- Rivers and rains—amount of material washed from surface of land and carried away by, 43
- Roman remains at Puzzuoli, condition of—proof of changes that take place in the level of the land, 32-38
- Rootzikul—marine scorpion-like animal from Silurian rocks, 282
- Russia—Theromorph reptiles, discovery and working out of skeletons near Archangel in North Russia by Professor Amalitzki,<sup>4</sup> 210, 212-222

### S

- Samos, Island of — Samotherium, giraffe-like animal found in Miocene beds, 159, 160
- Samotherium — giraffe-like animal :
  - Skull—photograph, 161
  - Teeth—crown of tooth in lower jaw divided by slit into two halves, described as bi-foliate, 159
- Saxony—Triassic rock from, showing footprints of Cheirotherium, 55
- Scales of fishes *see* Fishes
- Schweinfurth, traveller, 123
- Sclater, Dr., 164
- Scorpions :
  - Ancient and important animal—number of distinct species : extinct species, etc., 276, 277
  - Animal which connects scorpions with extinct Eurypterids and Trilobites—king-crab, 280
  - Desert scorpion—drawing, 276
  - Silurian scorpions and enormous aquatic scorpion-like creatures, 277-282
  - King-crab *see* that title
- Scotland—Fishes :
  - Fishes with head and body shields found in “ cornstones,” 258
  - Miller’s, Hugh, investigations relating to the Pterichthys, 252-256

## INDEX

- Scotland—Fishes—*contd.*  
Recent discoveries from the  
Upper Silurian strata,  
262
- Sea Cow :  
Bony plates instead of  
teeth, 23  
Description of, 22, 23  
Discovered by Steller, 21  
Fossils found in the Fayum,  
125  
Picture of, 22  
Sirenian group, sea-cow be-  
longing to, 23  
Skull, photograph of, 22
- Seely, Professor, 211
- Seychelles—tortoise becoming  
extinct in, 28
- Sharks :  
Most ancient kind of fish  
known, 247  
Probable size of the great  
shark—100 feet long,  
266  
Teeth — enormous teeth,  
where found, etc., 263,  
264, 265
- Shells and small marine ani-  
mals, etc. :  
Animals which lived inside  
these shells, similarity  
to the cuttle-fish, 269  
Bognor rock with shells em-  
bedded, photograph,  
45  
Coiled shells—ammonites,  
pearly nautilus, etc.,  
267  
Cuttle-fish — Belemnite's  
cuttle-fish, etc., 270  
Extinct allies of nautilus,  
268, 269
- Shells, etc.—*contd.*  
Lingula, shells of, found in  
the Cambrian rocks,  
272, 273  
Mollusca group, classes in-  
cluded in, 270  
Oldest fossils which are  
known — remains of  
small marine creatures,  
271, 272  
Trilobites *see* that title  
Vast number of smaller  
creatures included in  
“ Extinct Animals ”—  
mountains built up of  
rock formed by the  
coral, etc., 266
- Siberia—mammoth and rhi-  
noceros remains found  
in, 93, 94
- Silver-scaled fish — varieties  
and comparatively re-  
cent origin, etc., 246
- Sivatherium—extinct animal  
from India :  
Skull—photograph, 160  
Teeth of lower jaw—crown  
divided by slit into two  
halves, described as bi-  
foliate, 159
- Size :  
Bones — giants in former  
days, theory of, 2  
Mammals, remote ancestor  
not much bigger than  
a dog, 114  
Recent animals, size of,  
compared with their  
representatives in the  
past—illus ons as to  
extinct monsters, 165,  
166

## INDEX

- Size—*contd.*  
 (for particular animals  
 see their names)
- Skulls :  
 " Bull-dogging " of skulls  
 in elephants, pugs, etc.,  
 103-105, 106  
 Primitive man, skull com-  
 pared with that of a  
 monkey and of a mo-  
 dern man, 87-90  
 (for particular animals  
 see their names)
- Sloths :  
 Giant ground sloth, Mega-  
 therium :  
 Photograph of skeleton,  
 7  
 Probable appearance in  
 life—illustration, 171  
 Living sloths of South  
 America :  
 Size compared with re-  
 presentatives in the  
 past, 166, 167  
 Mylodon and two-toed  
 sloth, comparison be-  
 tween : skeletons, etc.,  
 172, 173  
 Two-toed specimens—pho-  
 tograph, 168
- Smaller creatures—vast num-  
 ber included in  
 " Extinct Animals "—  
 mountains built up of  
 rock formed by the  
 coral, etc., 266
- Snake :  
 Fossil remains of, found in  
 the Fayum, 125  
 Size of extinct snakes :  
 large size, 191
- Soft-bodied animals—no re-  
 mains in rocks to show  
 earliest form of animal  
 life preceding the  
 Cambrian Trilobites  
 and Lingula, 263, 275
- South Africa *see* Africa
- South America *see* America
- Sphenodon punctatus* (New  
 Zealand lizard, Tua-  
 tara)—photograph, 193
- Spiders—surviving represen-  
 tative of aquatic an-  
 cestors from which  
 modern air-breathing  
 scorpions and spiders  
 have been developed,  
 282, 283
- Spiral fold on walls of intes-  
 tine — skeleton with  
 excrement of the  
 ichthyosaurus, 229
- Spy, Belgium—skulls of pri-  
 mitive men found in  
 caverns, 89
- Squirrels—flyingsquirrels, 234
- Star fish *refer* to Stone-lilies
- Stegosaurus — probable ap-  
 pearance in life of the  
 Jurassic Dinosaur Ste-  
 gosaurus, 208
- Steller, discoverer of sea-  
 cow, 21, 22
- Stirling, Dr., 185
- Stone-lilies, or pentacrini, or  
 encrinites :  
 Block of limestone showing  
 several kinds of stone-  
 lilies from Iowa, 288  
 British encrinite—Vaughan  
 Thompson's discovery,  
 etc., 290

## INDEX

- Stone-lilies, etc.—*contd.*  
    Young of the feather-star — Vaughan Thompson's account established, etc., 291, 292  
    Common feather-star of today—resemblance to its remote Cambrian ancestors, 293  
    *Encrinus Fossilis* of Blumenbach from rock of Jurassic age, 289  
    Fossil remains, 287  
    Known as fossils before they were found in the living state, 286, 293  
    Number of, and various species, 289, 290, 293  
    Stalks, length of—photograph, etc., 287  
Stonesfield, jaw of mammal found at, 82, 84, 188  
Stratification of rocks :  
    Hard and soft rock, alternate layers :  
        Pictures showing strata of cliff at Lyme Regis, 48, 49, 51  
    Tilting of strata, 48, 49, 50, 51  
        Diagram showing effect of bending or undulation of earth's crust, 52, 53  
        Ripple marks preserved in Triassic strata, 53  
        Seaford, chalk at, 50  
    Time elapsed during formation of strata, estimate of, 61, 62  
Stratified rocks :  
    Footprints on slabs of Triassic rock, 53-55  
    Formation of stratified deposits from material brought down from the land by rivers, 44  
    Fossilized remains found in :  
        Jelly fish preserved in lithographic limestone, photograph, 48  
        Shells embedded in slab of Bognor rock, 45  
        Skeleton of animal found in calcareous rock at Montmartre, Paris, 46  
    Succession from simpler to more complex forms of life—diagram, etc., showing position in which animal remains have been found, 60-62  
    Wings of insects, impression preserved in limestone, 46, 47  
    Ripple marks and rain-drops, preservation of marks, 53  
    Thickness of systems of strata, diagram, etc., 60, 61  
Sturgeon—ganoid set of fishes sturgeon belonging to, 248  
Stylonurus — scorpion-like creature, 278, 281  
Succession of animal life from simpler to more complex forms—position in strata in which fossilized remains have been found, 60-62

## INDEX

- Suffolk :
- Fossil remains, 66, 295
  - Land swallowed up by the sea, 43
  - Shark's teeth found in the bone-bed of the Red Crag at Felixstowe, 264, 265
- Sussex :
- Bones and teeth of the iguanodon discovered by Dr. Gideon Mantell, 200
  - Tilted strata of chalk at Seaford, 50
- T
- Tadpoles—young of the Labyrinthodonts, 245
- Tanqueray's, Lord, estate, ancestry of wild cattle on, 17
- Tapirs :
- Fossil remains found all over Holarctic region, 66
  - Migration, results of—living tapirs found at present day in Sumatra and Central America, 66
- Teeth and jaws :
- Arsinötherium*, 154
  - Bi-foliate canine *see* sub-heading Slit
  - Birds, fossil remains of birds with teeth, 236
  - Dromatherium and Dryolestes; lower jaws of, 189
- Teeth and jaws—*contd.*
- Elephants :
    - Description of teeth, 107-110
    - Ridges, 110-112
  - Fishes—Dipterus, peculiar teeth of, 251
  - Horse :
    - Cheek-teeth of modern horse more complex than in ancestors, 140
    - Meshippus*, teeth of, 141
    - Upper molar tooth of a recent horse, 142
  - Human teeth :
    - Distinct from all other teeth, 80
    - Photograph of upper and lower jaw bone, 80
    - Reduced in number, 79
  - Iguanodon—serrated margin of teeth, 199, 200
  - Importance of, in determining animal to which a fragment belongs, 76
  - Mammals :
    - Fossil jaw from Stonesfield slate, 82, 84, 188
    - Modifications in teeth of mammals, 81
    - "Reduced dentition," 78
    - Typical number of teeth, 78
    - (*see also* sub-headings, names of animals)
  - Mammoth, 110, 111
  - Mastodons, jaws of, 126, 127, 128, 129, 131

## INDEX

- Teeth and jaws—*contd.*
- Pig's teeth :
    - Description of, number, arrangement, etc., 76, 78
    - Front teeth have single fang, cheek teeth two fangs, 78, 79
    - Photographs of, 77, 79
    - Standard pattern for teeth of all mammals, 76
  - Reptiles, teeth of, 81, 82, 83
  - Ridges — elephant, mammoth and mastodon compared, 110–115
  - Sea-cow—bony plates instead of teeth, 23
  - Sharks — enormous teeth, where found, etc., 263, 264, 265
  - Slit—crown of tooth in lower jaw divided by slit into two halves, described as bi-foliate — peculiarity of the giraffe and allied animals, 158, 159
  - Tusks *see* that title
  - Two fangs peculiar to mammals, other animals only single fangs, 78
  - Tetrabelodon angustidens* *see* Mastodon
  - Texas, *refer* to U.S.A.
  - Thames, river — amount of limestone, etc., carried past Kingston each year, 43
  - Theriogæa or land of big animals—zoological province, 63, 64
  - Theromorph reptiles :
    - Extinct order of reptiles, 192
    - Co-existence of, in the two localities, Russia and South Africa, 212, 221, 222
    - Older group than Dinosaurian reptiles—where remains had been discovered, etc., 209
    - Remoteness of the time when these reptiles lived, 218
    - Russia, North : Professor Amalitzky's discoveries, 212–222
      - Nodules containing skeletons, 213–216
      - (*for* particular members of this group *see* their names — *Pariasaurus*, *Dicynodon*, *Inostran-sevia*, etc.)
    - Thickness of each system of strata, diagram, etc., 60–62
    - Thigh-bone of *Atlantosaurus*, 11, 12
    - Thompson, Vaughan, 290
    - “Thunder-bolts” — Belemnite's cuttle-fish fossils, 270
    - Tiger—teeth of clouded tiger, 81
    - Tile-fish, destruction of, owing to change in temperature of sea, near American coast, 31 *note*



## INDEX

- Theromorph reptiles—*contd.*
- Tilting of strata, 48, 49, 50, 51  
Diagram showing effect of bending or undulation of earth's "crust," 52, 53  
Seaford, Sussex, chalk at, 50
- Time — stratified deposits, formation of — estimate of lapse of time, 61, 62
- Titanotherium—creature allied to rhinoceros:  
Brains much smaller than those of recent big animals, 148–151, 209  
Horns, 146  
Skeleton, picture of, 145  
Skull, Pictures of, 146, 147
- Tortoise:  
Becoming extinct, 28  
Fossil remains found in the Fayum, 125  
Giant living tortoise of the Court House, Mauritius, 28, 29  
Size of extinct tortoises—large size, 191
- Toxodon, 9—picture of, 8
- Tradition—information concerning extinct animals handed down by, 1
- Traquair, Prof., 260, 261, 262
- Trees — fossilized remains found in sand of Fayum Desert, 124
- Triceratops:  
Brain, size of, 209  
Drawing of, 207
- Trilobites—ancient class of fossils:  
Animals which connect scorpions with the extinct Trilobites—king-crab, 280  
Number of different kinds—primitive marine group allied to the scorpions, etc., 274  
Specimens in which legs and antennæ are well preserved, 275
- Trunk of elephant, development of, from elongated upper lip of mastodon, 118–122
- Tusks:  
*Dinoceras*, 148  
Dinotherium, mastodon-like creature found in the Miocene, 117, 118  
Elephants — Indian and African elephants compared — specimens of tusks in Natural History Museum, 99, 100, 101  
*Tetraelodon angustidens*, 116, 117, 120, 121  
Meritherium, 129

## U

- Uganda—five-horned giraffe, specimen shot by Sir Harry Johnston, 158  
Okapi-skin and skulls discovered by Sir Harry Johnston, 161, 163

## INDEX

- United States of America :  
*Atlantosaurus*, thigh-bone of, from Jurassic rocks, etc., 11, 12, 197, 198  
*Coccosteus* found in Devonian rocks of Ohio, 256, 217  
*Dimetrodon* from the Permian strata of Texas, 210, 212  
*Dinoceros*, skeletons found in Upper Eocene of Wyoming, 147  
*Didosaurian* reptiles—profusion in which bones have been discovered—skill and success of American naturalists, etc., 206  
*Ichthyornis*, toothed bird from chalk of Kansas, 237  
*Mastodon* remains found in bogs, etc., 102  
 Scorpion-like creature from Pennsylvania, 281  
 Shark's teeth found in Maryland, 264  
 Stone-lilies from Iowa—photograph, 288  
*Trilobite* from Silurian rocks of New York, 274, 275  
*Urus* or bull of Julius Cæsar, 16, 17  
 Skull, picture of, 17
- W
- Wales—shells of *Lingula*, discovered in Cambrian rocks, 272, 273
- Warsaw—Professor Amalitzky's discoveries at Archangel, workshop at Warsaw, 216  
 Water-birds—extinct *Hesperornis*, etc., 244  
 Whale-like reptiles—*Ichthyosaurus*, 226  
 Whales :  
 Size of, comparisons between size of recent and extinct animals, 166, 223  
 Skull of, mistaken for that of a reptile, 76  
 White rhinoceros or square-mouthed African rhinoceros *see* *Rhinoceros*  
 Winged reptiles *see* *Pterodactyles*  
 Wings :  
 Birds *see* that title  
 Insects — fossilized wings, preservation in stratified rock, 46, 47  
*Pterodactyles*, flying reptiles—wings compared with birds and bats, 231, 232, 233  
 Swimming organs, penguins use their wings as, 244  
 Winton, Mr. de, 125  
 Wolf—common grey wolf—extinct in England, still existing in Europe, 14, 16  
 Wombats—living specimens in Australias, size of, compared with gigantic extinct creatures of the same kind, 166

## INDEX

Woodward, Miss, 130

Worcestershire — fishes with  
head and body shields  
found in "cornstones,"  
257

Wyoming, skeleton of the  
*Diplodocus* excavated  
at, 204

### Y

Young animals—features re-  
sembling ancestors  
which disappear on at-  
taining full size, 106

### Z

Zebra :

Africa, zebra common in, 20

Okapi—hybrid or mule be-  
tween zebra and giraffe  
theory, 164

Photograph of living zebra,  
19

*Zonurus giganteus* great gir-  
dled lizard — photo-  
graph, 196

Zoo-geographical map, 63-66



---

---

A SELECTION

FROM

Messrs. Archibald

Constable & Co.'s

List

---

---

**The Far Eastern Tropics: Studies in the Administration of Tropical Dependencies**, by ALLEYNE IRELAND. With a Coloured Map. Large Crown 8vo. 7s. 6d. net.

The author of this book spent nearly three years in various Far Eastern countries, making himself thoroughly conversant with the colonial methods of Great Britain, France, Holland, and the United States. He deals with Burma, Java, the Malay Peninsula, Hong Kong, French Indo-China, Borneo, and the Philippines. Armed with credentials from the Foreign and Colonial Office, Mr. Ireland enjoyed exceptional opportunities of carrying on his investigations, and in his preface he expresses his gratitude to the many British and Foreign officials whose assistance at once lightened his labours, and increased their value during his stay in Eastern Asia.

Among the questions which the author discusses are Colonial Civil Service, Chinese Labour, the Currency Question, The Government of Tropical Dependencies, Educational Work in the Tropics, Colonial Finance and Colonial Legislation. Two valuable appendices complete the volume. The first, a Statistical Appendix showing the area, population, finances, trade and shipping of the countries treated of. The second, a selected bibliography of over one hundred works useful for a more detailed study of the question.

The Author, in his Preface, says:—"I am not without hope that, in the great scarcity of books in the English language on the subject of comparative colonization, students of political science may discover in them something of interest. . . . My object has been rather to excite an interest in the problems of tropical colonization than to attempt a final disposition of those problems according to my lights.

"Judging from my own experience during fifteen years of investigation in the field of colonial history and administration, the statistical and bibliographical appendices at the end of this volume should serve to smooth the path of any one who wishes to pursue further the lines of thought suggested in these studies."

## ANNOUNCEMENTS

---

---

### Important Historical Books.

#### RUSSIA.

**The First Romanovs (1613-1725).** A History of Moscovite Civilization and the Rise of Modern Russia under Peter the Great and his Fore-runners, by R. NISBET BAIN, Author of *The Pupils of Peter the Great*, *Peter III., Emperor of Russia*, etc. With 8 Illustrations. Demy 8vo. 12s. 6d. net.

Extracts from the Author's Preface.—“It will be my endeavour, in the following pages, to describe the social, ecclesiastical, and political conditions of Eastern Europe from 1613 to 1725, and trace the gradual transformation, during the seventeenth century, of the semi-monastic, semi-barbarous Tsardom of Moscovy into the modern Russian State. . . . The subject possesses the rare and crowning merit of almost absolute novelty. We have some half a dozen manuals of Russian history; we know something, by this time, of Peter the Great; we are even learning to know something about Ivan the Terrible. But seventeenth century Moscovy is still, to most of us, a *terra incognita*.”

#### FRANCE.

**Catherine De Medici and the French Reformation,** by EDITH SICHEL, Author of *Women and Men of the French Renaissance*, *The Household of the Lafayettes*, etc. Demy 8vo. With 12 Illustrations. 15s. net.

Miss Sichel's *Women and Men of the French Renaissance* was very well received. The present book treats of the French court at a slightly later date—the days of the last of the Valois. For English readers a special interest attaches to Catherine's court from the fact that it was there that Mary, Queen of Scots, was brought up, and her complex character for the most part moulded. Students of literature will be glad of the full treatment accorded to Ronsard and the Pleiade.

“Miss Edith Sichel has done a fine and distinguished piece of work. She has written a brilliant and scholarly book; a book it is both difficult and tempting to overpraise.”—*The Times*.

## ARCHIBALD CONSTABLE & CO.'S

---

### SCOTLAND.

John Graham of Claverhouse, Viscount of Dundee, 1648-1689, by C. SANFORD TERRY, M.A., Author of *The Life and Campaigns of Alexander Leslie, First Earl of Leven*, etc. Illustrated. Demy 8vo. 12s. 6d. net.

Professor Terry's contributions to Scottish history of the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries are well known. His new book may fairly claim to be the first authoritative biography of the great general. Since Napier's, which appeared nearly fifty years ago, many fresh facts have come to light, and much that was accepted as fact has been proved erroneous.

"On the whole it does not seem too much to say that this book promises to be the definitive biography of a man whose character has been traduced by 'prejudice founded upon wilful neglect of evidence.'"—*Morning Post*.

### ENGLAND.

The King in Exile, 1646-1654, by EVA SCOTT, Author of *Rupert Prince Palatine*. Demy 8vo. 15s. net.

A new work by Miss Scott, whose history of Prince Rupert was so favourably received by press and public. The King in Exile is the Second Charles, and the story of his wanderings on the Continent, and of the lives of his ever-faithful adherents makes fascinating reading.

"A most welcome contribution to historical literature upon a period in Charles's life, of which the average student knows comparatively little."—*Daily Graphic*.

*By the same Author.*

Rupert Prince Palatine. Demy 8vo. Illus. 3s. 6d. net.

A History of the Ancient World, by GEORGE STEPHEN GOODSPEED, Ph.D., Professor of Ancient History in the University of Chicago. With Illustrations, Maps, and Plans. Large Crown 8vo. 7s. 6d. net.

This volume surveys the whole history of the Ancient World from the earliest Oriental civilization to the crowning of Charlemagne as "Emperor of the Romans" in 800. It is primarily intended for teachers, but will have a value for all who are interested in early history. The illustrations are numerous, and many are in colour.

---



## Some Books on Russia and Japan.

The Japanese Spirit, by OKAKURA-YOSHISABURO.  
With an introduction by GEORGE MEREDITH.  
Foolscap 8vo. 3s. 6d. net.

"These Lectures by a son of the land, delivered at the University of London, are compendious and explicit in a degree that enables us to form a summary of much that has been otherwise partially obscure, so that we get nearer to the secret of this singular race than we have had the chance of doing before."—From Mr. Meredith's Introduction.

The Russo-Japanese Conflict : Its Causes and Issues,  
by K. ASAKAWA, Ph.D., Lecturer on the Civilization  
and History of East Asia at Dartmouth College, Author  
of the *Early Institutional Life of Japan*, etc. With an  
Introduction by FREDERICK WELLS WILLIAMS, Assistant  
Professor of Modern Oriental History in Yale University.  
Large Crown 8vo, about 400 pages. With 10 Full-page  
Illustrations and a Map. 7s. 6d. net.

[*Second Edition.*]

The *Times* says:—"Those who admire indefatigable research, lucidity of expression, and breadth of view in the treatment of contemporary history cannot fail to give a favourable reception to this volume; and the fact that the subject is treated with impartiality and a very agreeable spirit of moderation will do nothing to detract from the reader's pleasure. . . . He marshals his facts with order and skill, supplies every text and reference that we can require for the refreshing of our memories, and, while missing nothing of serious importance, preserves intact throughout the narrative a balanced judgment, a fine sense of proportion, and a perfect continuity of ideas."

A Secret Agent in Port Arthur, by WILLIAM  
GREENER. Crown 8vo. With Map, Plans, etc.  
6s.

The *Daily Telegraph* says:—"A welcome and readable contribution to the literature of the Far Eastern conflict."

The *Standard* says:—"Interesting and picturesque."

The *Morning Leader* says:—"The best book on the struggle yet published."

The *Daily Chronicle* says:—"Very admirable, vivid, and brightly told."

"A SWORD WITHOUT A STAIN."

Recollections and Letters of General Robert E. Lee, by CAPTAIN R. E. LEE. Demy 8vo. Illustrated with Portraits. 12s. 6d. net.

"The reading of such a work as this has something in it of encouragement and inspiration. 'The country which has given birth to men like him,' was the verdict of an English newspaper, 'may look the chivalry of Europe in the face without shame. For the Fatherlands of Sidney and Bayard never produced a nobler soldier, Christian, and gentleman than General Robert E. Lee.'"—*Daily News*.

Far and Near, by JOHN BURROUGHS, Author of *Green Fields*, *Walt Whitman*, etc. Crown 8vo. 5s. net.

"No man has done so much in the United States, during the last three decades, towards interesting his fellow-countrymen in the pure and simple pleasures of Nature, in the life of birds, the great woods and hills, the well-flowered clearing, and the sparkling brook. Mr. Burrough's hand has lost nothing of its cunning, and the reader will find in this volume many a charming picture and much interesting lore. The first half of the volume deals with 'Green Alaska'; in the second portion the author returns to his beloved home by the Hudson River, and gives us some delightful pictures of bird-life. Few writers on Nature have a more captivating pen than John Burroughs."—*Country Life*.

Bits of Gossip, by REBECCA HARDING DAVIS. Foolscap 8vo. 5s. net.

"Miss Davis's recollections go back to before the Civil War. She lived in a Virginian village to which her family had migrated from one of the cotton States; and she went afterwards to New England. She has some striking stories to tell about all these places. . . . This is most decidedly a book to be read."—*Spectator*.

Literary Portraits, by CHARLES WHIBLEY, Author of *A Book of Scoundrels*, etc. Frontispiece. Demy 8vo. 7s. 6d. net.

CONTENTS: Studies in Rabelais, Commines, Burton and several of the great Tudor translators.

"Mr. Whibley must be classed among the few discriminating critics of a day in which real sensitive criticism is as an oasis in the desert. . . . The level of performance is here singularly even and singularly high, and the book is a book for the library shelf, not a mere volume of essays to be read, returned, and forgotten."—*Athenæum*.

## ANNOUNCEMENTS

---

### TOLSTOY'S WORKS.

Translated by LOUISE and AYLMER MAUDE.

**Resurrection**, translated by LOUISE MAUDE. With a Preface and Appendix. 33 Illustrations by PASTERNAK. Small Crown 8vo. 2s. 6d. net.

**Sevastopol and other Military Tales**, including The Wood-felling, Meeting a Moscow Acquaintance in the Detachment, and Two Hussars. With Portrait, Map, and Preface. Small Crown 8vo. 2s. 6d. net.

\* \* \* These two volumes form the latest additions to Constable's Half-Crown Library. They are also issued in sixpenny editions in paper covers.

**Plays** : The Powers of Darkness, Fruits of Culture, and The First Distiller. Illustrated. New Edition. Crown 8vo. 2s. 6d. net. Uniform with the 2s. 6d. Edition of *Resurrection* and *Sevastopol*.

"Nobody who cares for real drama can afford to let this volume go unread."—*The Academy*.

**What is Art?** Paper, 1s. net. Cloth, 1s. 6d. net.

"Whoever is really conversant with Art recognizes in it the voice of the Master."—G. Bernard Shaw in *The Daily Chronicle*.

**Tolstoy and his Problems.** Essays by AYLMER MAUDE. Crown 8vo. Paper, 1s. net. Cloth, 1s. 6d. net.

This contains the only short life of Tolstoy approved by himself.

"Mr. Maude's long and intimate acquaintance with Tolstoy enables him to speak with a knowledge probably not possessed by any other Englishman."—*Morning Post*.

---

## ARCHIBALD CONSTABLE & CO.'S

---

A New Book by AYLMER MAUDE (the Translator of Tolstoy):

**A Peculiar People: The Doukhobórs.** Illustrated with 15 Photographs. Large Crown 8vo. 6s. net.

The Doukhobórs are an extraordinary sect of Russian communists who migrated to Canada in 1899. At first they gave considerable trouble to the Canadian Government, but latterly have become very prosperous. The present book gives a history of this "peculiar people," and discusses their connection with Lollards, Anabaptists, and other similar sects. A long and interesting letter from Tolstoy on his relation with the Doukhobórs is contained in the volume.

**Some Women of Wit and Beauty,** by JOHN FYVIE. Illustrated. Demy 8vo.

CONTENTS: The Unacknowledged Wife of George IV. (Mrs. Fitz-Herbert)—Nelson's Lady Hamilton—The Queen of the "Blue Stockings" (Mrs. Montagu)—"The Most Gorgeous Lady Blessington"—"The Female Quixote"—A Radical Lady of the Last Generation (Mrs. Grote)—The Real "Diana of the Crossways" (The Hon. Mrs. Norton)—A Tory Lady of the Last Generation (Lady Eastlake).

**Archbishop Laud and Priestly Government,** by HENRY BELL, Late Scholar of Clare College, and Member of the Indian Civil Service (retired), and of the Middle Temple, Barrister-at-Law. Demy 8vo. Price 10s. 6d. net.

"In writing the history of a life so varied in its circumstances and so tragic in its end, I have endeavoured, as far as possible, to draw a picture of the man as he appears in his own letters, memoir and diary, for it is only fair to judge him by his own actions and writings, and not by the caricatures of his enemies, or the equally misleading portraiture of his friends."—From the Author's Introduction.

**Michael Drayton,** by PROFESSOR OLIVER ELTON. Crown 8vo. Illustrated.

Professor Elton, who wrote an *Introduction to Michael Drayton* for the Spenser Society in 1895, and has made several valuable contributions to the history of our literature, is perhaps more competent to deal with the author of *The Battle of Agincourt* than any other living scholar.

---

## ANNOUNCEMENTS

---

**The Decoration of Leather.** Translated from the French of Georges de Recy by MAUDE NATHAN. With illustrations and examples of Leather Decoration from various sources.

"In a preface which is omitted from this translation, the author claims for his work a place between the books dealing solely with the history and development of the art of working in leather and those of which the object is to impart a knowledge of the technique of its various processes to amateurs who may be unable or unwilling to undertake a regular course of instruction. He points out that leather, in its adaptability to many different kinds of treatment, is a material eminently suited to the interpretation of the style of decoration known as 'modern art.'"—Extract from the Translator's Note.

**Scarabs, An Introduction to the Study of Egyptian Seals and Signet Rings,** by PERCY E. NEWBERRY. Illustrations in the text, coloured and other plates. Royal 8vo. 18s. net.

Ten years ago Professor Flinders Petrie's book on *Historical Scarabs* became out of print. Since then nothing has been done to fill its place. In the present volume Mr. Newberry, whose services to Egyptology are well known, supplies that want.

**Extinct Animals,** by PROFESSOR E. RAY LANKESTER, F.Z.S. Profusely illustrated with plates and in the text.

The substance of this volume was delivered, as a course of lectures, to a juvenile audience at the Royal Institution during the Christmas season, 1903-4.

**The Garden of Eden: Kempton Park once upon a Time,** by EDITH A. BARNETT, Author of "A Champion in the Seventies," "The Fetich of the Family," etc. Illustrated. Crown 8vo. 5s. net.

**The Sayings of Muhammad,** arranged by A. L. SUHRAWADY. 16mo. 2s. 6d. Uniform with the "Ingersoll Lectures."

## ARCHIBALD CONSTABLE & CO.'S

---

*By the Author of "Lives of the Hunted."*

**Monarch, The Big Bear,** by ERNEST THOMPSON SETON. With many drawings by the Author in half-tone and line. 5s. net.

"Some (nature students) are drily scientific, some are dull and prosy, some are sentimental, some are sensational, and a few are altogether admirable. Mr. Thompson Seton, as an artist and raconteur, ranks by far the highest in this field."—MR. JOHN BURROUGHS, in the *Atlantic Monthly*.

"A more charming and pathetic animal story was never written, even by that sympathetic student of wild life, Thompson Seton."—*Daily Express*.

**Two Little Savages.** Being the Adventures of Two Boys who Lived as Indians and what They Learned. With over 300 drawings. Written and Illustrated by ERNEST THOMPSON SETON. Post 8vo, cloth, 6s. net.

"From the delight and envy which this book has awakened in us we can imagine the unalloyed pleasure with which it will be devoured by all boys clever enough to understand it and fortunate enough to live where emulation of the doings of Yan and Sam and Sappy is within the horizon of possibility. . . . Mr. Seton's name is sufficient guarantee for the style, in which we inhale the aromatic freshness and pungency of the great forest-library where he has studied."—*Glasgow Herald*.

**Natural History in Zoological Gardens,** by FRANK E. BEDDARD, M.A. Oxon., F.R.S., Prosector of the Zoological Society, etc. Illustrated by GAMBIER BOLTON and WINIFRED AUSTEN. Extra Crown 8vo. 6s. net.

This volume contains an account of each of the principal kinds of animals found in most Zoological Gardens. The types of vertebrate life are placed in due relation to each other in an orderly way. It will be of assistance as a guide to the mammals, birds, reptiles, and amphibians collected together in such great variety at these institutions, and a great help to the study of animal life. It is sumptuously illustrated both from photographs and drawings.

"It gives a skilled and interesting account of the history, the appearance, and the habits of more than a hundred different kinds of beasts, birds, and creeping things. . . . The instructive and concise descriptions in the text are helped out by many admirable photographs."—*Scotsman*.

---

## ANNOUNCEMENTS

---

**The Life of Reason; or, The Phases of Human Progress**, by GEORGE SANTAYANA, Assistant Professor of Philosophy at Harvard University. Two volumes. 5s, net each.

CONTENTS OF VOL. I: The Birth of Reason—First Steps and First Fluctuations—Discovery of Natural Objects—On Some Critics of this Discovery—Nature Unified and Mind Discerned—Discovery of Fellow Minds—Concretions in Discourse and in Existence—Relative Values of Things and Ideas—How Thought is Practical—The Measure of Values in Reflection—Abstract Conditions of the Ideal—Flux and Constancy in Human Nature.

CONTENTS OF VOL. II: Love—The Family—Industry, Government and War—The Aristocratic Ideal—Democracy—Free Society—Patriotism—Ideal Society.

**The Citizen, A Study of the Individual and the Government**, by NATHANIEL SOUTHGATE SHALER, Professor of Geology in Harvard University, and Dean of Lawrence Scientific School. Crown 8vo., pp. viii. + 346. 6s. net.

SOME OF THE CONTENTS: The Origin of Mankind—The Beginnings of Government—On the Limits of Freedom—Wealth, Its Origin and Distribution—Foreign Possessions—The Future of the Commonwealth, etc.

---

## The Ingersoll Lectures.

**The Conception of Immortality**, by JOSIAH ROYCE, Professor of Philosophy at Harvard University. 16mo. 2s. 6d.

"His lecture is stimulating and helpful. . . . we have no hesitation in commending it to the thoughtful reader."—*Westminster Gazette*.

**Science and Immortality**, by WILLIAM OSLER, M.D., F.R.S., Regius Professor of Medicine at Oxford University. 2s. 6d.

"Thoughtful and suggestive."—*Lancet*.

**Human Immortality. Two Supposed Objections to the Doctrine**, by WILLIAM JAMES, Professor of Philosophy at Harvard University. 2s. 6d.

"One of the most suggestive and original writers, and as certainly the most brilliant psychologist living."—*Spectator*.

---

**Psychology**, by JAMES ROWLAND ANGELL, Head of the Department of Psychology in the University of Chicago. An Introductory Study of the Structure and Function of Human Consciousness. 7s. 6d. net.

**Wasps, Social and Solitary**, by GEORGE W. PECKHAM and ELIZABETH G. PECKHAM. With an Introduction by JOHN BURROUGHS and Illustrations by James H. EMERTON. Crown 8vo. 6s. net.

A detailed life story of the various species of Wasps, important to the scientist and fascinating to the general reader. By their observation and loving insight, Mr. and Mrs. Peckham may fairly claim to have done for the *Vespidæ* what M. Maeterlinck did for their cousins in his beautiful 'Life of the Bee.'

**The Souls of Black Folk**, by W. E. B. DUBOIS. Crown 8vo. 5s. net.

"Herein lie buried many things which if read with patience may show the strange meaning of being black here at the dawning of the Twentieth Century. This meaning is not without interest to you, Gentle Reader; for the problem of the Twentieth Century is the problem of the colour-line. . . I have sought here to sketch, in vague, uncertain outline, the spiritual world in which ten thousand thousand Americans live and strive. . . Leaving, then, the white world, I have stepped within the Veil, raising it that you may view faintly its deeper recesses—the meaning of its religion, the passion of its human sorrow, and of the struggle of its greater souls. All this I have ended with a tale twice told but seldom written, and a chapter of song."

**Sexti Properti Opera Omnia**. With a Commentary by H. E. BUTLER, M.A., Fellow of New College, Oxford. Extra Crown 8vo. 8s. 6d. net.

"No serious student of Propertius can in future afford to dispense with Mr. Butler's interesting and elucidating edition."—*School Guardian*.

**Dante's Ten Heavens**, by E. G. GARDNER, Author of *Dukes and Poets in Ferrara*, etc. Cheaper Edition, Revised. Demy 8vo. 5s. net.

"As a help to the minuter study, not of Dante only, but of what has always been regarded as the most obscure part of Dante's writings, it is hardly too much to say that no more valuable work has appeared in English."—*Athenæum*.



## ANNOUNCEMENTS

---

### Verse.

**Penthesilea.** A Poem, by LAURENCE BINYON, Author of *The Death of Adam*, etc. Crown 8vo. 3s. 6d. net.

**A Robin's Song and Other Poems,** by MARY SCOTT. Crown 8vo. 2s. 6d. net.

"Very melodious and pleasant little poems."—*Gentlewoman*.

---

**Urban VIII.,** by WILLIAM NASSAU WEECH, M.A., Late Scholar and Longstaff Exhibitioner of New College, Oxford. Crown 8vo. 3s. 6d. net.

**The Sun and the Serpent.** A Contribution to the History of Serpent Worship. By BRIGADE-SURGEON C. F. OLDHAM. Demy 8vo. With 33 Full-page Illustrations. Price 10s. 6d. net.

**Lord George Bentinck.** A Political Biography. By BENJAMIN DISRAELI (LORD BEACONSFIELD). New Edition, with a Preface by CHARLES WHIBLEY. Demy 8vo. 6s. net.

**A Register of National Bibliography,** by W. P. Courtney. Two volumes. Demy 8vo. 31s. 6d. net.

---

### **A New Book on Household Management.**

**Woman's Kingdom,** by MRS. WILLOUGHBY WALLACE, Illustrated by MRS. HERBERT DAVIS. Crown 8vo. 3s. 6d.

Suggestions as to furnishing, decorating and economically managing the home for people of limited means.

---

## New Technical Books.

**Steam Turbines**, with an Appendix on Gas Turbines and the Future of Heat Engines, by Dr. A. STODOLA, Professor at the Polytechnikum in Zurich. Authorized translation from the Second Enlarged and Revised German Edition by Dr. LOUIS C. LOEWENSTEIN, Department of Mechanical Engineering at Lehigh University. With 241 Cuts and 3 Lithograph Tables. Demy 8vo. 21s. net.

**Mechanical Movements, Powers, Devices and Appliances**, by GARDNER D. HISCOX, M.E., Author of *Gas, Gasoline and Oil Vapour Engines*, etc. Tenth Edition. Over 400 Pages, 1,649 Illustrations and Descriptive Text. Demy 8vo. 12s. 6d. net.

This work embraces an illustrated description of the greatest variety of mechanical movements and devices in any language. It is a book for inventors, students, draughtsmen, mechanics, engineers, electricians, and all interested in any way in the devising and operation of mechanical works.

**Mechanical Appliances, Mechanical Movements and Novelties of Construction**, being a supplement to the preceding volume by the same Author. 400 Pages, about 1,000 Illustrations. Demy 8vo. 12s. 6d. net.

An Encyclopædia of Mechanical Movements and Mechanical Appliances, including many novelties of Construction used in the practical operation of the Arts, Manufactures, and in Engineering. For engineers, draughtsmen, inventors and all others interested in Mechanical operations.

---

## ANNOUNCEMENTS

---

The Economic and Commercial Theory of Heat Power Plants, by ROBERT H. SMITH, A.M.I.C.E., M.I.M.E., M.I.E.E., etc., Prof. Em. of Engineering and Mem. Ord. Meiji. Imp. 8vo. 24s. net.

Steam Pipes, by W. H. BOOTH, Author of *Liquid Fuel and its Combustion*. Fully illustrated. Demy 8vo. 5s. net.

Steam Boilers, by H. H. POWLES, M.Inst.M.E., etc. Fully illustrated. Imp. 8vo. 24s. net.

Reinforced Concrete, by CHARLES F. MARSH, M.Inst.C.E. Fully illustrated. Imp. 8vo. 31s. 6d. net.

"A splendid addition to the literature of an important subject of engineering science."—*Engineering Times*.

The Flow of Steam through Convergent Nozzles and Orifices, by A. RATEAU. Authorized translation by H. BOYD BRYDON. Cr. 8vo. 4s. 6d. net.

Gas Engine Construction: A Practical Treatise, by HENRY V. A. PARSELL, jr., Member A. I. Electrical Engineers, and ARTHUR J. WEED, Mechanical Engineer. Fully illustrated. Demy 8vo. 10s. 6d. net.

Gas Engine Design, by CHARLES EDWARD LUCKE, Ph.D. Mechanical Engineering Department, Columbia University, New York City. Demy 8vo. 12s. 6d. net.

National Engineering and Trade Lectures, Edited by B. H. MORGAN, assisted by the Board of Trade and other Government Departments, various Colonial Governments, British Consular Officers, Chambers of Commerce, Employers' Federations, Technical Institutions, etc. Fully illustrated. 6s. net per volume.

Vol. 1. BRITISH PROGRESS IN MUNICIPAL ENGINEERING. A Series of Three Lectures, by WILLIAM MAXWELL, Assoc. M. Inst. C. E.

Vol. 2. BRITISH PROGRESS IN PUMPS AND PUMPING ENGINES. By PHILIP R. BJORLING, Consulting Engineer, Author of "Pumps and Pump Motors."

Vol. 3. BRITISH PROGRESS IN GAS WORKS PLANT AND MACHINERY. By C. E. BRACKENBURY, C.E., author of "Modern Methods of Saving Labour in Gasworks."

OTHER VOLUMES IN PREPARATION.

---

**Leprosy and Fish Eating**, by JONATHAN HUTCHINSON, F.R.S., LL.D. Camb. Edin. and Glasgow; F.R.C.S.; late President of the Royal College of Surgeons. Demy 8vo.

This work comprises statements as to the History of Leprosy, its Nature, its prevalence in different countries, and the conditions under which it has disappeared from many. Facts are brought forward to show that it is not ordinarily contagious, and that its real cause is the use as food of badly cured fish. It is held that the segregation of lepers is useless, and that compulsory laws are wholly unjustifiable. There are chapters on the influence of sex in relation to Leprosy, of religious creed, and of poverty. The volume contains maps and illustrations.

---

## Some Recent Medical Books,

**New Methods of Treatment**, by Dr. LAUMONIER; translated from the Second edition and Edited by H. W. SYERS, M.A., M.D., Cantab. Crown 8vo. 7s. 6d. net.

**The Surgery of the Diseases of the Appendix Vermiformis and their Complications**, by WILLIAM HENRY BATTLE, F.R.C.S., Surgeon to St. Thomas' Hospital, and EDRED M. CORNER, M.B., B.Ch., F.R.C.S., Assistant Surgeon to St. Thomas' Hospital. Demy 8vo. 7s. 6d. net.

**Clinical Causes of Cancer of the Breast**, by CECIL H. LEAF, F.R.C.S. Demy 8vo. 2s. net.

**Clinical and Pathological Observations on Acute Abdominal Diseases**, by EDRED M. CORNER, B.Sc. Lond., M.A., M.B., B.C. Cantab., F.R.C.S. Eng., Surgeon to Out-Patients, Surgeon to the Physical Exercise Department, St. Thomas' Hospital. Demy 8vo. 3s. 6d. net.

---

## ANNOUNCEMENTS

---

### Fiction.

---

Crown 8vo. 6/- each volume.

#### JOHN FLETCHER'S MADONNA.

By MRS. COMYNS CARR,

Author of "Cottage Folk," etc.

"Mrs. Comyns Carr has very cleverly worked out an original idea, contriving her picture in a perfect mosaic of picturesque detail. . . . The Baron strongly recommends it to those capable of enjoying a good novel when they get it."—*Punch*.

#### IN SEARCH OF THE UNKNOWN.

By ROBERT W. CHAMBERS,

Author of "Cardigan," "Maids of Paradise," "The Maid at Arms," etc. With a Frontispiece.

"An elaborate joke of an entertaining kind."—*Daily Graphic*.

#### THE WEDDING OF THE LADY OF LOVELL, AND OTHER MATCHES OF TOBIAH'S MAKING.

By UNA L. SILBERRAD,

Author of "Petronilla Heroven," "The Success of Mark Wyngate," etc.

"It may be safely said that few tales of recent years have been more excellently told. There is a quiet humorous force about the style, a mature originality, which is altogether admirable."—*Morning Leader*.

#### CRITTENDEN.

By JOHN FOX,

Author of "The Little Shepherd of Kingdom Come," etc.

#### A ROUGH REFORMER.

By ERNEST GLANVILLE,

Author of "The Kloof Bride," etc.

---

**THE OUTLET**

By **ANDY ADAMS,**

Author of "The Log of a Cowboy," "A Texas Matchmaker,"  
etc. Illustrated by E. BOYD SMITH.

Of "The Log of a Cowboy," *The Daily Mail* said:—"It is splendidly masculine and tells of gritty life, where men do not lie on what Stevenson has called 'the feather-bed of civilization,' but taste the primal joys of the natural man."

**WILL WARBURTON.**

By **GEORGE GISSING,**

Author of "Veranilda," "The Private Papers of Henry  
Ryecroft," etc.

**A NEW NOVEL.**

By **MEREJKOWSKI,**

Author of "The Death of the Gods" and "The Forerunner."  
This completes the trilogy, "Christ and Anti-Christ."

**JÖRN UHL.**

By **GUSTAV FRENSSSEN,**

Translated from the German. Over 180,000 have already been  
sold of this remarkable novel.

**THE STEPPING STONE.**

By **HELEN HESTER COLVILL,**

Author of "Our Wills and Fates," "Mr. Bryant's Mistake," etc.

**TALES OF RYE TOWN.**

By **MRS. STEPNEY RAWSON,**

Author of "A Lady of the Regency," "Journeyman Love," etc.

"The best book of short stories we have read for a year or two—one of  
the best we have ever read."—*Morning Post.*

**THE QUEEN'S MAN.**

By **ELEANOR C. PRICE,**

Author of "Angelot," "Off the High Road," etc.

**ISIDRO.**

By **MARY AUSTIN,**

Author of "The Land of Little Rain," etc. Illustrated by Eric Pape.

---

## Some Recent Publications.

**The Bridgewater Gallery.** 120 of the most noted paintings at Bridgewater House, reproduced in Photogravure from Photographs, by WALTER LONGLEY BOURKE. With Descriptive Historical Text by LIONEL CUST, M.V.O., Surveyor of the King's Pictures and Works of Art, and Director of the National Portrait Gallery. The edition is strictly limited to 100 copies for sale, and 15 for presentation, the price to subscribers being 50 guineas net. With each copy of the book a portfolio containing 6 large autotype plates will be supplied.

"The last few years have witnessed the publication of more sumptuous books on the fine arts than any period of similar length in the history of the world, and among these books Messrs. Constable's monumental volume on the Bridgewater Gallery must take the first place."—C. J. H. in the *Burlington Magazine*.

"Nothing more splendid has been accomplished in this direction. In the first place the 120 reproductions in photogravure are all of them extraordinarily fine impressions. Such perfection in the engraving and printing as is here seen can only be the result of infinite care and fastidious selection. It implies, besides the mastery of the mechanical craft, a real appreciation of the beauties to be rendered, a choice of the best impressions, and a stern rejection of everything that does not come up to the highest standard."—*Athenæum*.

**The Prado Gallery and its Masterpieces,** by CHARLES RICKETTS. With 54 Illustrations in Photogravure. Imperial quarto, 5 guineas net. Edition limited to 350 copies, for sale; also 50 copies on Japan vellum. 15 guineas net.

"Mr. Ricketts writes with learning and distinction of the pictures in that wonderful collection at Madrid. The critic seems equally at home in discussing the Spanish, Italian, or Netherlands school. . . . The work is illustrated by fifty-four photogravures, some of which are large, and the pictures represented are many of them among the world's masterpieces. The volume is therefore a delightful one, as it is good both to look at and to read."—*Spectator*.

**The Old Road**, by HILAIRE BELLOC. With Numerous Photogravures and other Illustrations by WILLIAM HYDE. Maps and Plans. 31s. 6d. net.

"His style is admirable, a little elaborate, and often distinguished; and Mr. William Hyde's illustrations to this very handsome book are gems. He has the secret of getting at the spirit of landscape with a fine economy of means. So we have a model affair of its kind."—*Athenæum*.

**Dukes and Poets in Ferrara**. A study in the Politics, Poetry and Religion of the 15th and early 16th centuries, by EDMUND G. GARDNER, Author of *Dante's Ten Heavens*, etc. With numerous Photogravure Plates. Demy 8vo. 18s. net.

"Mr. Gardner brings the whole place before the eyes, just as the age, of which it is a magnificent monument, is vivified in the pages of his admirable study."—*Westminster Gazette*.

**Great Englishmen of the 16th Century**, by SIDNEY LEE. Illustrated with Portraits. Demy 8vo. 7s. 6d. net.

"This is quite the best work that Mr. Sidney Lee has given us, with the possible exception of his introduction to Elizabethan Sonnets in *An English Garner*."—*Academy and Literature*.

**William Cobbett**. A Study of His Life as shown in his Writings, by E. I. CARLYLE. Demy 8vo. Illustrated. 7s. 6d. net.

"We have, we think, said enough to show that we have read this book with real enjoyment and interest, and to express our appreciation of the way in which the author has performed his difficult and laborious task."—*Athenæum*.

**John of Gaunt**, by S. ARMITAGE-SMITH. With Portraits and Maps. Demy 8vo. About 500 pp. 18s. net.

"No more important work on mediæval history has appeared during recent years."—*Athenæum*.

---



## ANNOUNCEMENTS

---

Letters of William Stubbs, Bishop of Oxford, Edited by W. H. HUTTON, B.D. Demy 8vo. Illustrated. 17s. 6d. net.

"Here we have contributions to the biography of the great English historian that are of the greatest value. Primarily, the book is 'a collection of letters.' But Mr. Hutton has made of it something more by his additional narrative which welds the flow of correspondence into a consecutive text."—*Westminster Gazette*.

Quintin Hogg, a Biography by ETHEL HOGG. With a Preface by the DUKE OF ARGYLL. Illustrated. Demy 8vo. Price 12s. 6d. net. [3rd Edition.

"This book is an excellent record of a life entirely given to good works."—*Times*.

The Life and Letters of Hippolyte Taine. Translated and edited by Mrs. R. L. DEVONSHIRE. Vol. I. (1828-1852); Vol. II. (1853-1870). Crown 8vo. 7s. 6d. net each. To be completed by a third volume.

"Full of good things . . . should find a large and appreciative circle of readers. Mrs. Devonshire's translation strikes us as of peculiar excellence."—*Academy and Literature*.

Inner Jerusalem, by Miss GOODRICH FREER. Fully illustrated from Photographs. Demy 8vo. 12s. 6d. net.

"Whatever may be true of other places, every one has an interest in Jerusalem. For the many who can never hope to visit it themselves, Miss Freer's book will be of real assistance, while those who do make the journey would probably do so with more profit if they could find room for this shapely volume in their luggage."—*Outlook*.

*By the same Author.*

Outer Isles. Illustrated by ALLAN BARRAUD. Demy 8vo. 5s. net.

"For picturesque descriptions of the sombre scenery, for information as to the manners and customs of the aborigines, and their miserable habitations, their strange superstitions and their strong religious feelings, we should desire no better guide."—*Times*.

Wanderings in the Great Forests of Borneo, by Dr. ODOARDO BECCARI. Revised and edited by F. H. H. GUILLEMARD, M.A. With numerous illustrations. Demy 8vo. 16s. net.

"Not since the appearance, a good many years ago, of Dr. A. R. Wallace's great work on the *Malay Archipelago*, has there been such an attractive volume on natural history in that profuse region."—*Morning Leader*.

English Metal Work. A Collection of 93 Drawings made in the early nineteenth century by WILLIAM TWOPENY and preserved in the British Museum. With an Introduction by LAURENCE BINYON, and descriptive text by LAWRENCE WEAVER, F.S.A. Imperial 8vo. 15s. net.

"This beautifully presented volume."—*Bookseller*.

Contemporary France, 1870-1900, by GABRIEL HANOTAUX. Translated by J. C. TARVER, M.A., and Illustrated with Portraits. In 4 volumes. Vol. I. (1870-1873), 15s. net; Vol. II. 15s. net (in the Press).

The first volume is chiefly concerned with the Franco-Prussian War, and with the Rise and fall of M. Thiers.

"M. Hanotaux's *Contemporary France* is likely to be the standard work on French history of thirty years ago . . . we are grateful to Mr. Tarver for putting so important a book in the hands of English readers."—*Monthly Review*.

The Paston Letters, edited by JAMES GAIRDNER, LL.D., Author of a *Life of Richard III.*, etc. In 4 volumes. Vol. I., Henry VI., 1422-1461; Vol. II., Edward IV., 1461-1471; Vol. III., 1471-1509; Vol. IV., Introductory and Supplementary. A Photogravure Frontispiece to each volume. Crown 8vo. 21s. net. the set. Vol. IV. sold separately, 10s. 6d. net.

Every letter is exhaustively annotated. A Chronological Table, and most copious Indices conclude the work.

"The Paston Letters are an important testimony to the progressive condition of Society, and come in as a precious link in the chain of moral history of England, which they alone in this period supply. They stand, indeed, singly, as far as I know, in Europe; for though it is highly probable that in the archives of Italian families, if not in France or Germany, a series of merely private letters equally ancient may be concealed; I do not recollect that any have been published. They are all written in the reigns of Henry VI. and Edward IV., except a few that extend as far as Henry VII., by different members of a wealthy and respectable, but not noble, family; and are therefore pictures of the life of the English gentry of that age."—Henry Hallam, *Introduction to the Literature of Europe*, i. 228, Ed. 1837.

---

## ANNOUNCEMENTS

---

### AN ENGLISH GARNER

Ingatherings from our History and Literature, the Original Impression of which is now out of print. Price 4s. net per vol. Complete in 12 uniform vols. (of about 400 8vo pages each) as follows :—

**Tudor Tracts.** With an Introduction by A. F. POLLARD, F.R.Hist.S., Author of *Protector Somerset*, etc.

**Stuart Tracts.** With an Introduction by C. H. FIRTH, Fellow of All Saints, Author of *Oliver Cromwell*.

**Late Stuart Tracts.** With an Introduction by GEORGE A. AITKEN, Author of *A Life of Steele*.

**Voyages and Travels.** Mainly of the Fifteenth and Sixteenth Centuries. With an Introduction by C. RAYMOND BEAZLEY, Fellow of Merton, Author of *The Dawn of Modern Geography*. 2 vols. 8s. net.

**Social England Illustrated.** With an Introduction by ANDREW LANG.

**Critical Essays and Literary Fragments.** With an Introduction by CHURTON COLLINS.

**Elizabethan Sonnets.** With an Introduction by SIDNEY LEE. 2 vols. 8s. net.

**Longer and Shorter Elizabethan Poems.** With an Introduction by A. H. BULLEN, Editor of *Elizabethan Song Books*. 2 vols. 8s. net. *Sold separately*.

**Fifteenth Century Prose and Verse.** With an Introduction by ALFRED W. POLLARD.

“The series of volumes comprising *An English Garner* is honourably distinguished among the cheap reprints of our time by the value and weight of the introduction provided.”—*Athenæum*.

Messrs. Constable also publish a re-issue of Arber's *English Reprints* and *The English Scholar's Library*. For particulars of titles, prices, etc., see Messrs. Constable's complete catalogue.

---

**University Extension.** The Organ of University Extension Movement. Published three times a year (in November, February and June), Price 3d. per copy. Annual subscription 1s. per annum. Post Free.

---

## Some Military Books.

**My Service in the Indian Army—and After**, by GENERAL SIR LUTHER VAUGHAN. With Portrait and Maps. Demy 8vo. 16s. net.

"The volume, which is attractively presented, will be read with keen attention by the author's many old friends, and by all who are interested in the history of the North-Western Frontier of the Punjab."—*Athenæum*.

**The Story of a Soldier's Life**, by FIELD-MARSHAL VISCOUNT WOLSELEY, G.C.M.G. 2 volumes. With Portraits and Maps. Demy 8vo. 32s. net.

"The reader will find in Lord Wolseley's autobiography delightful matter and shrewd observance of character. It is a straightforward tale of a soldier's life, interspersed with shrewd criticism."—*St. James's Gazette*.

"A personal narrative which will rank as one of the most interesting stories that ever came from a military writer."—*Daily Chronicle*.

**The History of the King's Bodyguard of the Yeomen of the Guard**, by COLONEL SIR REGINALD HENNEL, D.S.O. With about 70 coloured plates, photogravures, collotypes, etc. Limited to 300 copies for sale. £3 3s. net.

"The records now published are no mere regimental chronicle; they are an epitome of English history for over four hundred years."—*Athenæum*.

**The Fight for Canada**, by MAJOR WILLIAM WOOD. Illustrated. Demy 8vo. 21s. net.

"The first matter for consideration in a book of this kind is as to its permanent value—whether it contains new facts, or puts old ones in a new light. *The Fight for Canada* does, being the fruit of much research and constant pains . . . his intimate personal acquaintance with Quebec and the regions round gives a vividness to his descriptions of the battlefield, and of Wolfe's encampment at the glorious Falls of Montmorency, that adds immensely to the value of the book."—*Daily Chronicle*.

## ANNOUNCEMENTS

---

The Life and Campaign of Hugh, 1st Vicount Gough. Illustrated with Portraits, Maps and Plans. 2 volumes. Demy 8vo. 31s. 6d. net.

"A complete biography. The book is one to be read by all and closely studied by all military students."—*Athenæum*.

The Second Afghan War, 1878–80. Vol. I., Demy 8vo, 10s. net. Vol. II., Demy 8vo, 15s. net.

"From first to last the book will repay study by every one who cares to understand how wars can be made—and avoided."—*Times*.

---

### Three Books of Parody.

By OWEN SEAMAN.

"Mr. Owen Seaman is the prince of parodists."—*Star*.

A Harvest of Chaff. Fcap. 8vo. 3s. 6d. net.

"To praise them is superfluous . . . no one quite comes up to Mr. Seaman. This volume is fully up to the best of its predecessors. Whether the fun or the ingenuity is the more to be admired we cannot say."—*Spectator*.

The contents of this book are for the most part parodies of modern poets written in Mr. Seaman's happiest vein. A few poems of a more serious temper—"Lines in Memoriam"—conclude the volume.

Borrowed Plumes. Fcap. 8vo. 3s. 6d. net.

"There are passages in this book which are positively inspired . . . a superbly witty and alert collection of criticisms, written in a style as sure as a master-surgeon's knife."—*Spectator*.

"Borrowed Plumes" are mostly in prose. Meredith and Henry James, Marie Corelli and Hall Caine, and many another distinguished contemporary novelist in turn receive Mr. Seaman's attention.

---

Lost Masterpieces, by ST. JOHN HANKIN. Fcap. 8vo. 3s. 6d. net.

"Here we have parody of manner, parody itself."—*Glasgow Herald*.

"They deserve a niche on the shelf below one's favourite poets."—*Yorkshire Post*.

---

## Recent Verse.

St. Frídeswide and other Poems, by FLORENCE HAYLLAR. Fcap. 8vo. 2s. 6d. net.

"The poem [The Witch] as a whole is invested with a weird and magical atmosphere, such as Coleridge knew well how to produce. The simile in the last stanza, the suppressed intensity of the feeling, and the strong, bold touches, are not unworthy of him. No less imaginative is 'Home from Battle,' which we quote in full. . . . Dramatic power and a Homeric simplicity of manner are here combined, while the pathetic meaning is left to be suggested by the mere presentment of the situation, as Palgrave well said of Scott's little masterpiece, 'Proud Maisie.' We are reminded of Surtee's fine ballad, 'Barthram's Dirge,' but it must, we think, be admitted that Miss Hayllar has the advantage of the older poet."—*Athenæum*.

The Agamemnon of Aeschylus. Translated into English Verse by Rev. EDWARD THRING, the late Headmaster of Uppingham. Crown 8vo. Leather, 10s. 6d. net.

"The general result is to convey to the Greekless English reader a strikingly effective presentation of one of the most powerful and least accessible examples of Greek literary achievement."—*Educational Times*.

---

## New Editions.

Man and Superman, by GEORGE BERNARD SHAW. Crown 8vo. 6s. Third Edition.

The Stage Society are shortly to give a performance of this play.

Mr. Max Beerbohm says: "This is his masterpiece."

Asia and Europe. Studies presenting the conclusions formed by the Author in a long life devoted to the subject of the Relations between Asia and Europe. By MEREDITH TOWNSEND. Crown 8vo. 5s. net.

"If I could only afford to buy one book this summer I should certainly choose Mr. Meredith Townsend's."—*British Weekly*.

## ANNOUNCEMENTS

---

**Canada in the Twentieth Century**, by A. G. BRADLEY, Author of *The Fight with France for North America*. With many Illustrations and a Map. Demy 8vo. 5s. net.

"A really practical volume of great utility, besides being exceedingly pleasant reading."—*Daily Telegraph*.

**Farthest North**, by FRIDTJOF NANSEN. An Entirely New Edition of Nansen's Famous Book of Travel. Illustrated with a Portrait of Nansen, 2 Maps, and about 20 Full-page Plates. Cloth Gilt. Demy 8vo. 6s.

"A book for everybody who loves a story of romance and adventure."—*Westminster Gazette*.

**Cities of India**, by G. W. FORREST, C.I.E., Ex-Director of Records, Government of India. With 30 Illustrations. Demy 8vo. 5s. net.

"A charming book, which should be in the hands of all who wish to understand and realize our great Indian dependency."—*Pilot*.

**Travels Round Our Village**, by ELEANOR G. HAYDEN, Author of *From a Thatched Cottage*, etc. With numerous Illustrations and Cover Design by L. LESLIE BROOKE. Extra Crown 8vo. 3s. 6d. net.

"A delightful book in every sense of the words."—*Country Life*.

---

**By Thames and Cotswold**, by REV. W. H. HUTTON. With many Illustrations. Demy 8vo. 5s. net. [*Reduced from 10s. 6d. net.*]

"No word of praise should be withheld from Mr. Hutton. His sketches are informative as well as entertaining."—*Scotsman*.

---

## Constable's 2/6 Series :

A new series of popular copyright Novels. Bound in Cloth, gilt-lettered back and side, with design. Small Crown 8vo. Price 2s. 6d. net.

**Cardigan**, by ROBERT W. CHAMBERS, Author of *The Maids of Paradise*, *Ashes of Empire*, etc.

"A fine and inspiring story, fittingly told."—*Athenæum*.

**Dracula**, by BRAM STOKER, Author of *The Jewel of Seven Stars*, etc.

"The very weirdest of weird tales."—*Punch*.

**The Death of the Gods**, by MEREJKOWSKI. A new Edition of the novel by this famous Russian writer.

"Here, in the enthusiasm of reading, we are ready to admit another to the select circle of great historical novels, and they are few."—*Daily Chronicle*.

**Park Lane**, by PERCY WHITE. A New Edition of Mr. Percy White's most successful novel since *The West End*.

"Witty, smart, modern, up-to-date."—*Star*.

New Additions of Exceptional Interest.

**Castle Omeragh**, by F. FRANKFORT MOORE, Author of *The Jessamy Bride*, etc.

**Resurrection**, by LEO TOLSTOY. With Introduction and Appendix. 33 Illustrations by PASTERNAK.

**Sevastopol**, and other Military Tales, by LEO TOLSTOY. With Portrait of Tolstoy and Map.



## ANNOUNCEMENTS

---

### Recent 6s. Fiction.

**The Divine Fire**, by MAY SINCLAIR, Author of *Two Sides of a Question*, *Mr. and Mrs. Nevill Tyson*, etc.

"My Nautical Retainer writes: One is apt to despair of English criticism when a novel like MAY SINCLAIR'S *The Divine Fire* (CONSTABLE) goes almost unregarded. Possibly, our conductors are themselves guided by established reputations: and Miss Sinclair's was yet to make. She was not Mrs. HUMPHRY WARD, for instance, and she was not Mr. HENRY JAMES. Yet the one might well envy the delightful humour that here tempers a very perfect sincerity, and the other might admire how an analytic subtlety, as delicate as his own, could avoid obscurity and a too laboured finesse. Miss Sinclair's intuition—for experience would never have embraced such a diversity of types—is something more than feminine. . . . Miss SINCLAIR is always quietly sure of herself. That is why she will not be hurried, but moves through her gradual scheme with so leisured a serenity; why her style, fluent and facile, never forces its natural eloquence; why her humour plays with a diffused light over all her work and seldom needs the advertisement of scintillating epigrams. Judged by almost every standard to which a comedy like this should be referred, I find her book the most remarkable that I have read for many years"—Mr. OWEN SEAMAN in *Punch*.

**Veranilda**, by GEORGE GISSING, Author of *The Private Papers of Henry Ryecroft*, *New Grub Street*, etc. With a Prefatory Note by FREDERIC HARRISON. [3rd Edition.

"Gissing's maturest, latest and most deliberately conceived book . . . the book that lay nearest his heart during the last years of his life."—Mr. H. G. Wells in the *Sphere*.

*For six months the best selling book in the United States.*

**In the Bishop's Carriage**, by MIRIAM MICHELSON. Illustrated.

"Everyone is reading or wanting to read 'In the Bishop's Carriage.'" *Academy and Literature.*

**Paths of Judgment**, by ANNE DOUGLAS SEDGWICK, Author of *The Dull Miss Auchinard*, etc.

"The novel shows insight of an unusual order."—*Speaker*.

---

## A. CONSTABLE & CO.'S ANNOUNCEMENTS

---

**CONSTABLE'S STANDARD SERIES.** A re-issue, in handsome cloth gilt binding, of Popular Works of Travel, History and Biography. Price 3s. 6d. net each.

**The Fight with France for North America**, by A. G. BRADLEY, Author of *Wolfe*, etc. Demy 8vo. Illustrated.

"A trustworthy and effective narrative. . . . Braddock and Wolfe, Amherst and Washington, the excellent Montcalm and the vain incapable Vaudreuil are admirably drawn. Mr. Bradley writes as enthusiastic and almost as eloquent English as Macaulay."—*Spectator*.

**Bartholomew Sastrow.** The Memoirs of a German Burgo-master. Translated by ALBERT VANDAM, Author of *An Englishman in Paris*, with an Introduction by HERBERT FISHER, M.A. Extra Crown 8vo. Illustrated.

"One of the most vivid presentations of the life of a past age that we have ever read."—*Guardian*.

**The Alps from End to End**, by SIR WILLIAM MARTIN CONWAY. With a Chapter on the Western and Central Alps by the REV. W. A. B. COOLIDGE, and Illustrations by A. D. McCORMICK. Extra Crown 8vo.

"There's perhaps not another living Alpinist—unless we except Mr. Coolidge, who contributes a valuable précis of the topography—who could have combined the requisite knowledge with physical capacity for the task."—*Standard*.

**The Waterloo Campaign, 1815**, by WILLIAM SIBORNE. Illustrated.

"There can be no doubt that the narrative is a classic in its way."—*Globe*.

**Rupert Prince Palatine**, by EVA SCOTT, Author of *The King in Exile*. With a Frontispiece.

"Miss Scott has not only made herself familiar with Rupert and his surroundings, but is possessed of—what is seldom to be found—a rare talent for biographical presentment."—Mr. S. R. Gardiner in *The English Historical Review*.

**The Household of the Lafayettes**, by EDITH SICHEL. Author of *Catherine de Medici and the French Reformation*, etc. With a Frontispiece.

"A very vivid and picturesque study of French life during the revolutionary period."—*Morning Post*.

# THE WORKS OF GEORGE MEREDITH

---

THE ORDEAL OF RICHARD FEVEREL  
BEAUCHAMP'S CAREER  
SANDRA BELLONI  
VITTORIA  
EVAN HARRINGTON  
THE EGOIST  
ONE OF OUR CONQUERORS  
LORD ORMONT AND HIS AMINTA  
THE AMAZING MARRIAGE  
DIANA OF THE CROSSWAYS  
THE ADVENTURES OF HARRY RICHMOND  
RHODA FLEMING  
THE SHAVING OF SHAGPAT  
THE TRAGIC COMEDIANS  
SHORT STORIES  
POEMS—2 Vols.

## POCKET EDITION.

In 17 vols. as above. On thin opaque paper, bound in red cloth, gilt lettered and gilt top, 2s. 6d. net per volume; in full leather, 3s. 6d. net per volume.

## LIBRARY EDITION.

Volumes as above, with the addition of "An Essay on Comedy," in one volume. 18 volumes, crown 8vo, each with a photo-gravure frontispiece, 6s. each.

"To-day, by the general consent of the English-speaking world, or of that part of it at any rate which concerns itself at all with the humaner letters, *he is accepted as our foremost living novelist*. There are few things in literary history more curious than the emergence of Mr. Meredith from prolonged obscurity finally into assured and universal fame. Something of the kind there was perhaps in Shakespeare's case and something too in Goldsmith's. . . . Mr. Meredith went on writing for the few, and the few read him, but they were determined that he should also be read by the many. If there be any one who still doubts the practical influence of literary criticism upon the 'general reader' he has striking proof of it here. The victory of Mr. Meredith is also a victory of the critics. It was a few hardy pioneers, with Mr. Swinburne at their head, and Mr. Stevenson, Mr. Henley, and Mr. Barrie of their company, who 'discovered' Mr. Meredith, and insisted in season and out of season that the world at large should share the fruits of their discovery. . . . Mr. Meredith, like Voltaire, has been crowned with the laurel in his life-time."—*The Daily Chronicle*.

## Standard Books

**WILLIAM SHAKESPEARE'S WORKS, Illustrated Edition.** In 20 Imperial 16mo Volumes, with coloured title-page and end-papers designed by LEWIS F. DAY, and a specially designed coloured Illustration on Jap. vellum to each play, by L. LESLIE BROOKE, BYAM SHAW, HENRY J. FORD, etc. Cloth gilt, extra, gilt top, gilt back, with headband and bookmarker 2s. 6d. net per volume, or £2 10s. the set. Each volume sold separately.

**SIR WALTER SCOTT. The Waverley Novels.** The favourite Edition of Sir Walter Scott. A Facsimile of the Edition of 1829 published by Cadell & Co. With all the original Plates after Sir DAVID WILKIE, R.A.; Sir EDWIN LANDSEER, R.A.; C. R. LESLIE, R.A.; CLARKSON STANFIELD, R.A., etc. (re-engraved). In 48 vols. Fcap. 8vo. Cloth, paper label title, 1s. 6d. net per volume, or £3 12s. net the set. Also cloth gilt, gilt top, 2s. net per volume, or £4 16s. net the set; and half leather gilt, 2s. 6d. net per volume, or £6 net the set.

**BOSWELL'S LIFE OF JOHNSON.** Edited by AUGUSTINE BIRRELL, K.C. With Frontispiece in Photogravure to each volume by ALEXANDER ANSTED. 6 vols. Fcap. 8vo. Cloth gilt, designed by GLEESON WHITE, or paper label uncut. 12s. net the set. Also half leather. 18s. net the set. Illustrated (Limited Edition) with 100 Portraits selected by ERNEST RADFORD. 6 Volumes. Crown 8vo. Bound in red buckram, paper label, gilt top. Sold only in sets. Price 25s. net.

**BOSWELL'S ACCOUNT OF DR. JOHNSON'S Tour to the Hebrides.** With Photogravure Frontispieces. Uniform with "Boswell's Johnson." Cloth gilt or paper label. 4s. net the two vols. Also in half leather. 6s. net the two vols.

**EDMUND SPENSER. THE FAERIE QUEENE.** Complete in Six Volumes. Fcap. 8vo. Cloth, 9s. net. Edited by KATE M. WARREN. 1s. 6d. net each. Also Art Canvas, gilt extra, with Photogravure Frontispiece, 2s. 6d. net per vol.; complete in case, 15s. net.

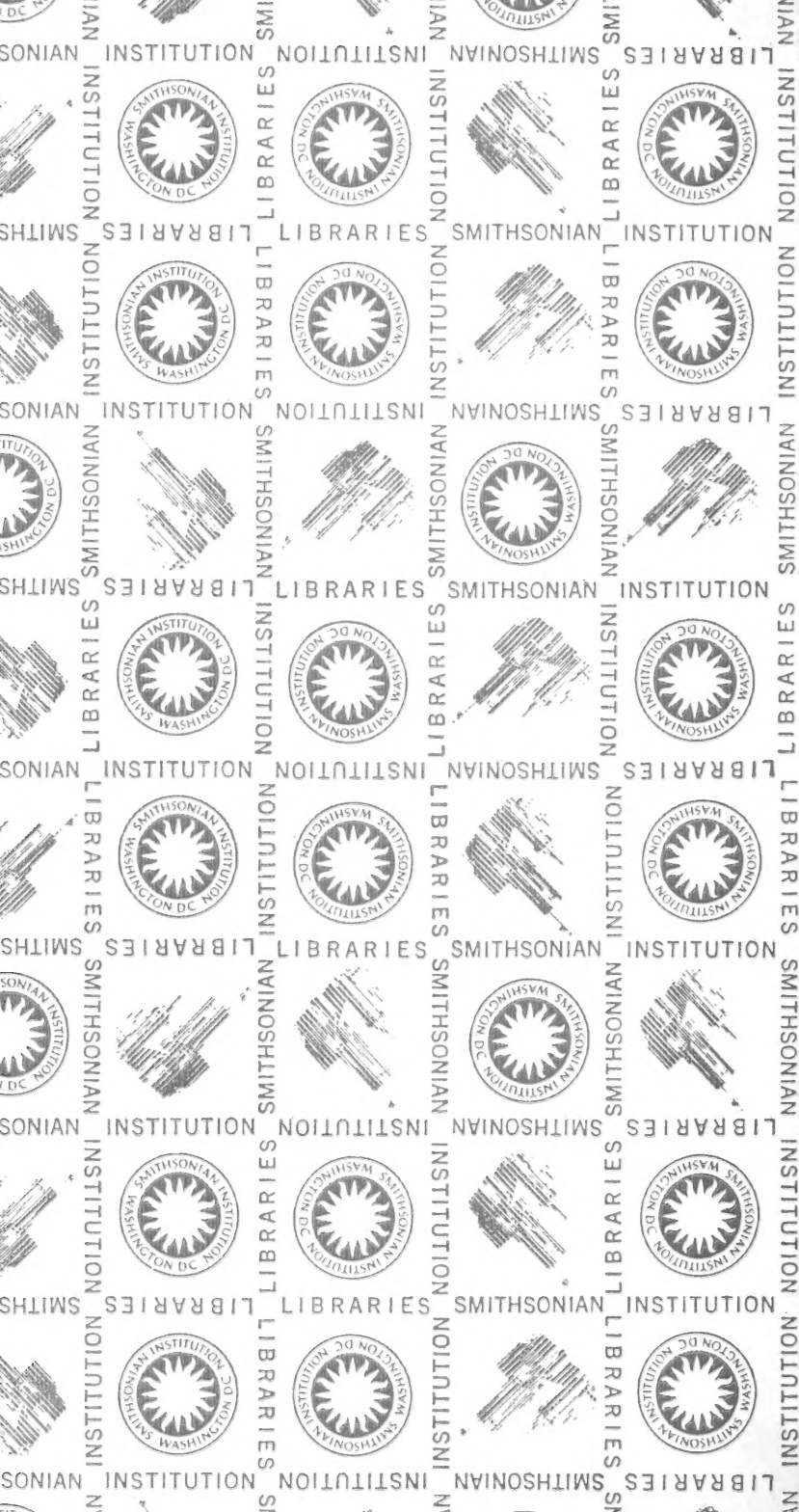
---

ARCHIBALD CONSTABLE & CO LTD  
16, JAMES STREET, HAYMARKET, S.W.



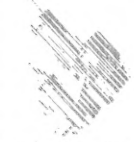








SMITHSONIAN INSTITUTION LIBRARIES



SMITHSONIAN INSTITUTION LIBRARIES



3 9088 00735 8856